THE ADVENTURES OF Peregrine Pickle.

In which are included,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, & veras hinc ducere voces.
HOR.

The THIRD EDITION.

LONDON:
Printed for R. BALDWIN, and M. RICHARDSON,
in Pater-noster-Row. M DCC LXV.

BRITISH MUSEUM

THE CONTENTS OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

CHAP. LXXIII.

PEregrine *arrives at the garison, where he receives the last admonitions of Commodore* Trunnion, *who next day resigns his breath, and is buried according to his own directions. Some gentlemen in the country make a fruitless attempt to accommodate matters betwixt Mr.* Gamaliel Pickle *and his eldest son.* page 1

CHAP. LXXIV.

The young gentleman having settled his domestic affairs, arrives in London, *and sets up a gay equipage. He meets with* Emilia, *and is introduced to her uncle.* p. 8

CHAP. LXXV.

He prosecutes his design upon Emilia *with great art and perseverance.* p. 16

CHAP. LXXVI.

He prevails upon Emilia *to accompany him to a masquerade, makes a treacherous attempt upon her affection, and meets with a deserved repulse.* p. 22

CHAP. LXXVII.

He endeavours to reconcile himself to his mistress, and expostulates with the uncle, who forbids him the house. p. 31

CHAP. LXXVIII.

He projects a violent scheme, in consequence of which he is involved in a most fatiguing adventure, which greatly tends towards the augmentation of his chagrin. p. 36

CHAP. LXXIX.

Peregrine *sends a message to Mrs.* Gauntlet, *who rejects his proposal. He repairs to the garison.* p. 46

CHAP. LXXX.

He returns to London, *and meets with* Cadwallader, *who entertains him with many curious particulars.* p. 52

CHAP. LXXXI.

The memoirs of a lady of quality. p. 63

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXXII.

He perſuades Cadwallader *to aſſume the character of a magician, in which he acquires a great ſhare of reputation, by his reſponſes to three females of diſtinction, who ſeverally conſult the reſearches of his art.* p. 237

CHAP. LXXXIII.

Peregrine *and his friend* Cadwallader *proceed in the exerciſe of the myſtery of fortune-telling, in the courſe of which they atchieve various adventures.* p. 247

CHAP. LXXXIV.

The conjurer and his aſſociate execute a plan of vengeance againſt certain infidels who pretend to deſpiſe their art; and Peregrine *has an adventure with a young nobleman.* p. 264

CHAP. LXXXV.

Peregrine *is celebrated as a wit and patron, and proceeds to entertain himſelf at the expence of whom it did not concern.* p. 274

To Lord ———

My Lord,

THE turn which your lordſhip gave to the converſation of laſt night, having laid me under the neceſſity of vindicating the ſtep I have lately taken in publiſhing Memoirs of my life, I think I have a right to demand your opinion of the motives which I then explained; and this I aſk by way of appeal to your judgment, from the ſentiments of thoſe who might perhaps think my inducements were weak or frivolous. For, though no perſon in the company attempted to invalidate the arguments I advanced, I could perceive that one gentleman was not altogether convinced of the rectitude of that meaſure: you may remember he dropped ſeveral diſſenting hints, couched in the modeſt expreſſions of *with ſubmiſſion to your ladyſhip's better judgment.—But to be ſure, you would not have taken ſuch a ſtep without firſt weighing the conſequences.—Your provocations were certainly very great, although the world is apt to put the worſt conſtructions upon every thing:* —And other ſuch prudential inſinuations that are often more diſconcerting than the diſplayed objections of a declared antagoniſt; becauſe they ſeem to import ſomething of great weight, which perſonal reſpect endeavours to ſuppreſs. Theſe ſententious fragments made ſuch impreſſion upon my mind, that I have been all night long, taſking

my recollection, in order to diſcover the weak ſide of my defence; but, as one always ſees through the miſt of partiality, in one's own concerns, I muſt have recourſe to your diſcernment, and ſeriouſly inſiſt upon knowing how far you approve the juſtification of,

My Lord,

your lordſhip's

moſt obedient ſervant.

ANSWER.

Madam,

I Cannot help obſerving that the ſerious manner in which you aſk my opinion of the motives, which induced you to publiſh your memoirs, is exactly of a piece with the conduct of thoſe who conſult their friends, for approbation rather than advice, and by a diſappointment in their expectations of applauſe, are more than ever wedded to their own inventions. How would your ladyſhip look, ſhould I now, in conſequence of your demand, aſſume the air of a ſevere moraliſer, and tell you, that the ſtep you have taken, was altogether precipitate and inexcuſable, that you have unneceſſarily avowed your own indiſcretion, incurred the reſentment of individuals, and attracted the reproaches of a cenſorious world; and that over and above theſe diſadvantages, you have ſubjected yourſelf for ever, to a life

a life of domeſtic diſquiet, by incenſing the tyrant of whom you complain, beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs or reconciliation? Would not all the reſentment of a diſappointed author, take poſſeſſion of your ladyſhip; overcaſt that chearfulneſs of countenance with a ſullen frown, and lighten from theſe fair eyes in gleams of diſpleaſure? No, you would be more ſurprized than offended at my obſervations. You would believe you had been all along deceived in your opinion of my delicacy and underſtanding: you would be mortified at the diſcovery of your own miſtake, and look upon me with compaſſion, as one of thoſe tame, timid rationaliſts, who being naturally phlegmatic and fearful, are utter ſtrangers to the refined ſenſations of the human heart, incapable of doing juſtice to thoſe melting tenderneſſes which they never felt, and too irreſolute to withſtand the torrent of ignorant, malicious or wrong-headed clamour, when it affects a character in which their friendſhip ought to be intereſted. Your ſentiments, I own, would in that caſe be juſt, excepting that I ſhould engage your ladyſhip's pity, in deſerving your contempt, and inſtead of being deſpiſed as a cold friend, be ſtill regarded by you, as a weak and timorous well-wiſher. If your character ſuffered cruelly from miſrepreſentations; if your foibles were magnified and multiplied with all the aggravations of envy and fiction; if the qualities of your heart were decried or traduced, and even your underſtanding called in queſtion; I agree with your ladyſhip, that it was not only excuſable but highly neceſſary to publiſh a detail of your conduct, which would acquit you of all or moſt

of thoſe ſcandalous imputations. This taſk you have (in my opinion) performed, to the ſatisfaction of all the intelligent and unprejudiced part of mankind. He muſt be very deficient in candour and feeling, who, in reading your memoirs, is not intereſted in your favour; who does not eſpouſe the cauſe of beauty, innocence and love; who does not ſee that as you once were, you would ſtill have continued to be the pattern of conjugal faith and felicity; had not the croſs accidents of fortune, forced you from the natural biaſs of your diſpoſition: who does not excuſe the tenderneſs, which youth and ſenſibility ſo circumſtanced, could not poſſibly reſiſt; and who does not freely forgive the fault, when he conſiders the particulars of the temptation. He muſt be devoid of all taſte and reflection, who does not admire your ſpirit, elegance and ſenſe; and dead to all the finer movements of the ſoul, if he is not agitated, thrilled and tranſported with the pathetic circumſtances of your ſtory. Some people who are your ladyſhip's friends, and highly entertained with the performance, have wiſhed you had ſpared yourſelf ſome unneceſſary confeſſions which they thought could ſerve no end, but that of affording a handle to your enemies, for cenſure and defamation: I myſelf, I own, was of the ſame opinion, until you convinced me that in ſuppreſſing one circumſtance which might be afterwards diſcovered, your ſincerity through the whole piece would have been called in queſtion. And what have you avowed, that your moſt malicious foes dare blame, except your diſregard of an unnatural contract, which (tho' authoriſed by the laws of your country) was impoſed upon your neceſſity,

youth and inexperience? Nor was this conduct the reſult of vicious levity and intemperance: you had already given undeniable proofs of your conſtancy and conjugal virtue, to the firſt lord of your affections, who was the choice of your love, and to whom your heart was unalterably wedded. Your natural ſenſibility had been, by his extraordinary care, tenderneſs and attention, cheriſhed and improved to ſuch a degree of delicacy, as could not poſſibly reliſh the attachment of the common run of huſbands. No wonder then that you was uneaſy under a ſecond engagement ſo much unlike the firſt; that every circumſtance of the contraſt appeared to you in the moſt aggravating light, and made a ſuitable impreſſion upon your imagination; and that you was not inſenſible to thoſe attractions, which had formerly captivated your heart, nor able to reſiſt the flattering inſinuations, incredible aſſiduity, and ſurpriſing perſeverance of an artful lover. And ſure he could not have choſen a more favourable opportunity to prefer his addreſſes: your paſſions were unuſually intendered by grief; you was diſſatisfied with your domeſtic ſituation; you was ſolitary for want of that intimate connexion in which you had been ſo happy before, and your breaſt glowed with the moſt pathetic ſuſceptibility, while you was yet a ſtranger to the inſidious wiles of man. In ſuch diſtreſs, the mind longs for ſympathy and conſolation; it ſeeks to repoſe itſelf upon the tender friendſhip of ſome kind partner, that will ſhare and alleviate its ſorrows: ſuch a comforter appeared in the accompliſhed youth: your judgment was pleaſed with his qualifications: his demeanour acquired your eſteem;

your

your friendſhip was engaged by his ſincerity, and your affection was inſenſibly ſubdued. In ſhort, every thing conſpired to promote his ſuit, and my wonder is not that he ſucceeded, but that you held out ſo long. Your ſentiments with regard to thoſe who have inveighed againſt your performance, are altogether conformable to that good ſenſe and benevolent diſpoſition, which I have always admired and eſteemed. As for writers who have exerciſed their pens in abuſing your ladyſhip, they are either objects of mirth or compaſſion. They, poor, harmleſs creatures, in their hearts, wiſh you no evil. Their buſineſs is to eat honeſtly, if they can,—but at any rate to eat. I am fully perſuaded that for a very ſmall ſum, you might engage the whole tribe to refute their own revilings, and bellow with all their might in your praiſe. It would really be uncharitable as well as abſurd, to expreſs the leaſt reſentment againſt ſuch feeble antagoniſts, who are literally the beings of a ſummer day: they are the noiſy inſects, which the ſun of merit never fails to produce; the ſhadows that continually accompany ſucceſs; and indeed a man might as well fight with his own ſhadow, as attempt to chaſtiſe ſuch unſubſtantial phantoms. But of all the emotions of your heart, that which I am at preſent tempted chiefly to applaud, is the ſorrow you expreſs, for having been obliged, in your own juſtification, to vilify and expoſe the man to whom your fate is inſeparably connected; and the laudable reſolution you have taken to live amicably with him for the future, provided he ſhall perſiſt in that conduct, which he hath of late choſen to maintain. On the whole, tho'

you may have inflamed the virulence of envy and malice, roused the resentment of some whose folly and ingratitude you had occasion to display, and incurred the censure of those, who think it their duty to exclaim against the least infringement of the nuptial tie howsoever unequally imposed; your memoirs will always be perused with pleasure, by all readers of taste and discernment, and your fame as a beauty and author, long survive the ill offices of prejudice, and personal animosity. And now that I have performed the task enjoined, give me leave to add, that I have the honour to be,

Madam,

your most devoted

humble servant.

THE CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

CHAP. XXXV.

HE embarks for France; *is overtaken by a ſtorm; is ſurpriſed with the appearance of* Pipes; *lands at* Calais, *and has an affair with the officers of the cuſtom-houſe.* page 1

CHAP. XXXVI.

He makes a fruitleſs attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, *where he ſpends the evening with certain* Engliſh *exiles.* p. 10

CHAP. XXXVII.

Proceeds for the capital. Takes up his lodging at Bernay, *where he is overtaken by Mr.* Hornbeck, *whoſe head he longs to fortify.* p. 18

CHAP. XXXVIII.

They ſet out in company, breakfaſt at Abbe Ville, *dine at* Amiens, *and about eleven o'clock arrive at* Chantilly, *where* Peregrine *executes a plan which he had concerted upon* Hornbeck. p. 24

CHAP. XXXIX.

He is involved in an adventure at Paris, *and taken priſoner by the city-guard. Becomes acquainted with a* French *nobleman, who introduces him into the* beau monde. p. 29

CHAP. XL.

Acquires a diſtinct idea of the French *government; quarrels with a mouſquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquiſhes, after having puniſhed him for interfering in his amorous recreations.* p. 38

CHAP. XLI.

Mr. Jolter *threatens to leave him on account of his miſconduct, which he promiſes to rectify; but his reſolution is defeated by the impetuoſity of his paſſions. He meets accidentally with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *who elopes with him from her huſband, but is reſtored by the interpoſition of the* Britiſh *embaſſador.* p. 48

CHAP. XLII.

Peregrine *reſolves to return to* England, *is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal.* p. 58

CHAP. XLIII.

He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, *with whom the doctor enters into a diſpute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war.* p. 67

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumstances. p. 74

CHAP. XLV.

The painter is persuaded to accompany Pickle *to a masquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troublesome adventure, and with his companion conveyed to the* Bastile. p. 86

CHAP. XLVI.

By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter *is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the physician. Applies to the Embassador, who with great difficulty obtains the discharge of the prisoners, on certain conditions.* p. 93

CHAP. XLVII.

Peregrine *makes himself merry at the expence of the painter, who curses his landlady, and breaks with the doctor.* p. 98

CHAP. XLVIII.

Pallet *conceives an hearty contempt for his fellow-traveller, and attaches himself to* Pickle, *who, nevertheless, persecutes him with his mischievous talent, upon the road to* Flanders. p. 107

CHAP. XLIX.

Nor is the physician sacred from his ridicule. They reach Arras, *where our adventurer engages in*

play with two French *officers, who next morning give the landlord an intereſting proof of their importance.* p. 116

CHAP. L.

Peregrine *moralizes upon their behaviour, which is condemned by the doctor, and defended by the governor. They arrive in ſafety at* Liſle, *dine at an ordinary, viſit the citadel. The phyſician quarrels with a* North-Briton, *who is put in arreſt.* p. 122

CHAP. LI.

Pickle *engages with a knight of* Malta, *in a converſation upon the* Engliſh *ſtage, which is followed by a diſſertation on the theatres of the ancients, by the doctor.* p. 129

CHAP. LII.

An adventure happens to Pipes, *in conſequence of which he is diſmiſſed from* Peregrine's *ſervice. The whole company ſet out for* Ghent *in the* Diligence. *Our hero is captivated by a lady in that carriage; intereſts her ſpiritual director in his behalf.* p. 136

CHAP. LIII.

He makes ſome progreſs in her affections; is interrupted by a diſpute between Jolter *and a* Jew; *appeaſes the wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an interview with his fair enſlaver, in which he finds himſelf deceived.* p. 144

CHAP.

CHAP. LIV.

He makes another effort towards the accompliſhment of his wiſh, which is poſtponed by a ſtrange accident. p. 150

CHAP. LV.

They depart from Ghent. *Our hero engages in a political diſpute with his miſtreſs, whom he offends, and pacifies with ſubmiſſion. He practiſes an expedient to detain the carriage at* Aloſt, *and confirms the prieſt in his intereſt.* p. 156

CHAP. LVI.

The French coquet entraps the heart of the Jew, *againſt whom* Pallet *enters into a conſpiracy; by which* Peregrine *is again diſappointed, and the* Hebrew's *incontinence expoſed.* p. 162

CHAP. LVII.

Pallet, *endeavouring to unravel the myſtery of the treatment he had received, falls out of the frying pan into the fire.* p. 169

CHAP. LVIII.

Peregrine, *almoſt diſtracted with his diſappointments, conjures the fair* Fleming *to permit his viſits at* Bruſſels. *She withdraws from his purſuit.* p. 183

CHAP. LIX.

Peregrine *meets with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *and is conſoled for his loſs. His valet de chambre is embroiled with her duenna, whom, however, he finds means to appeaſe.* p. 190

CHAP.

CHAP. LX.

Hornbeck *is informed of his wife's adventure with* Peregrine, *for whom he prepares a ſtratagem, which is rendered ineffectual by the information of* Pipes. *The huſband is ducked for his intention, and our hero apprehended by the patrole.* p. 196

CHAP. LXI.

Peregrine *is releaſed.* Jolter *confounded at his myſterious conduct. A conteſt happens between the poet and painter, who are reconciled by the mediation of their fellow travellers.* p. 203

CHAP. LXII.

The travellers depart for Antwerp, *at which place the painter gives a looſe to his enthuſiaſm.* p. 211

CHAP. LXIII.

Peregrine *artfully foments a quarrel between* Pallet *and the phyſician, who fight a duel on the ramparts.* p. 218

CHAP. LXIV.

The Doctor exults in his victory. They ſet out for Rotterdam, *where they are entertained by two* Dutch *gentlemen in a yacht, which is overturned in the* Maes, *to the manifeſt hazard of the painter's life. They ſpend the evening with their entertainers, and next day viſit a cabinet of curioſities.* p. 229

CHAP. LXV.

They proceed to the Hague; *from whence they depart for* Amſterdam, *where they ſee a* Dutch *tragedy.*

tragedy. Viſit the muſick-houſe, in which Peregrine *quarrels with the captain of a man of war. They paſs through* Haarlem, *in their way to* Leyden. *Return to* Rotterdam, *where the company ſeparates, and our hero, with his attendants, arrives in ſafety at* Harwich. p. 237

CHAP. LXVI.

Peregrine *delivers his letters of recommendation at* London, *and returns to the gariſon, to the unſpeakable joy of the commodore and his whole family.* p. 244

CHAP. LXVII.

Sees his ſiſter happily married. Viſits Emilia, *who receives him according to his deſerts.* p. 253

CHAP. LXVIII.

He attends his uncle with great affection, during a fit of illneſs. Sets out again for London; *meets with his friend* Godfrey, *who is prevailed upon to accompany him to* Bath; *on the road to which place, they chance to dine with a perſon, who entertains them with a curious account of a certain company of adventurers.* p. 260

CHAP. LXIX.

Godfrey *executes a ſcheme at* Bath, *by which a whole company of ſharpers is ruined.* p. 266

CHAP. LXX.

The two friends eclipſe all their competitors in gallantry, and practiſe a pleaſant project of revenge upon the phyſicians of the place. p. 273

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXI.

Peregrine *humbles a noted hector, and meets with a strange character at the house of a certain lady.* p. 283

CHAP. LXXII.

He cultivates an acquaintance with the Misanthrope, who favours him with a short sketch of his own history. p. 299

THE

THE ADVENTURES OF Peregrine Pickle.

CHAP. XXXV.

He embarks for France; *is overtaken by a ſtorm; is ſurpriſed with the appearance of* Pipes; *lands at* Calais, *and has an affair with the officers of the cuſtom-houſe.*

SCARCE had the veſſel proceeded two leagues on the paſſage, when the wind ſhifting, blew directly in their teeth; ſo that they were obliged to haul upon a wind, and alter their courſe. The ſea running pretty high at the ſame time, our hero, who was below in his cabbin, began to be ſqueamiſh, and in conſequence of the ſkipper's advice, went upon deck for the comfort of his ſtomach; while the governor, experienced in theſe diſaſters, ſlipt into

bed, where he lay at his eaſe, amuſing himſelf with a treatiſe on the Cycloid, with algebraical demonſtrations, which never failed to engage his imagination in the moſt agreeable manner.

In the mean time the wind increaſed to a very hard gale, the veſſel pitched with great violence, the ſea waſhed over the decks, the maſter was alarmed, the crew were confounded, the paſſengers were overwhelmed with ſickneſs and fear, and univerſal diſtraction enſued. In the midſt of this uproar, Peregrine holding faſt by the taffril, and looking ruefully ahead, the countenance of Pipes preſented itſelf to his aſtoniſhed view, riſing as it were from the hold of the ſhip. At firſt he imagined it was a fear-formed ſhadow of his own brain; though he did not long remain in this error, but plainly perceived that it was no other than the real perſon of Thomas, who jumping on the quarter deck, took charge of the helm, and dictated to the ſailors with as much authority as if he had been commander of the ſhip. The ſkipper looked upon him as an angel ſent to his aſſiſtance, and the crew ſoon diſcovering him to be a thorough-bred ſeaman, notwithſtanding his livery-frock, obeyed his orders with ſuch alacrity that in a little time the confuſion vaniſhed, and every neceſſary ſtep was taken to weather the gale.

Our young gentleman immediately conceived the meaning of Tom's appearance on board, and when the tumult was a little ſubſided, went up and encouraged him to exert himſelf for the preſervation of the ſhip, promiſing to take him again into his ſervice, from which he ſhould never be diſmiſſed, except at his own deſire. This aſſurance had a ſurpriſing effect upon Pipes, who, though

though he made no manner of reply, thruſt the helm into the maſter's hand, ſaying, "Here, you old bum-boat woman, take hold of the tiller, and keep her thus, boy, thus;" and ſkipped about the veſſel, trimming the ſails, and managing the ropes with ſuch agility and ſkill, that every body on deck ſtood amazed at his dexterity.

Mr. Jolter was far from being unconcerned at the uncommon motion of the veſſel, the ſinging of the wind, and the uproar which he heard above him; he looked towards the cabbin-door with the moſt fearful expectation, in hope of ſeeing ſome perſon who could give ſome account of the weather, and what was doing upon deck; but not a ſoul appeared, and he was too well acquainted with the diſpoſition of his own bowels to make the leaſt alteration in his attitude. When he had lain a good while in all the agony of ſuſpence, the boy tumbled headlong into his apartment, with ſuch noiſe, that he believed the maſt had gone by the board, and ſtarting upright in his bed, aſked with all the ſymptoms of horror, what was the cauſe of that diſturbance? The boy, half ſtunned by his fall, anſwered in a dolorous tone, "I'm come to put up the dead-lights." At mention of dead-lights, the meaning of which he did not underſtand, the poor governor's heart died within him; he ſhivered with deſpair. His recollection forſaking him, he fell upon his knees in the bed, and fixing his eyes upon the book which was in his hand, began to pronounce aloud with great fervor, "The time of a compleat oſcillation in the cycloid, is to the time in which a body would fall through the axis of the cycloid DV, as the circumference

cumference of a circle to its diameter—" He would in all likelihood have proceeded with the demonſtration of this propoſition, had he not been ſeized with ſuch a qualm as compelled him to drop the book, and accommodate himſelf to the emergency of his diſtemper; he therefore ſtretched himſelf at full length, and putting up ejaculations to heaven, began to prepare himſelf for his latter end, when all of a ſudden the noiſe above was intermitted; and as he could not conceive the cauſe of this tremendous ſilence, he imagined that either the men were waſhed overboard, or that deſpairing of ſafety, they had ceaſed to oppoſe the tempeſt. While he was harrowed by this miſerable incertainty, which, however, was not altogether unenlightened by ſome ſcattered rays of hope, the maſter entered the cabbin: then he aſked with a voice half extinguiſhed by fear, how matters went upon deck? and the ſkipper with a large bottle of brandy applied to his mouth, anſwered in a hollow tone, "All's over now, maſter." Upon which Mr. Jolter giving himſelf over for loſt, exclaimed with the utmoſt horror, "Lord, have mercy upon us! Chriſt, have mercy upon us!" and repeated this ſupplication as it were mechanically, until the maſter undeceived him, by explaining the meaning of what he had ſaid, and aſſuring him that the ſquall was over.

Such a ſudden tranſition from fear to joy, occaſioned a violent agitation both in his mind, and body; and it was a full quarter of an hour before he recovered the right uſe of his organs. By this time the weather cleared up, the wind began to blow again from the right corner, and the ſpires of Calais appeared at the diſtance of five leagues;

leagues; ſo that the countenances of all on board were lighted up with joyous expectation; and Peregrine venturing to go down into the cabbin, comforted his governor with an account of the happy turn of their affairs.

Jolter, tranſported with the thought of a ſpeedy landing, began to launch out in praiſe of that country for which they were bound. He obſerved, that France was the land of politeneſs and hoſpitality, which were conſpicuous in the behaviour of all ranks and degrees, from the peer to the peaſant; that a gentleman and a foreigner, far from being inſulted and impoſed upon by the lower claſs of people, as in England, was treated with the utmoſt reverence, candour and reſpect; that their fields were fertile, their climate pure and healthy, their farmers rich and induſtrious, and the ſubjects in general the happieſt of men. He would have proſecuted this favourite theme ſtill farther, had not his pupil been obliged to run upon deck, in conſequence of certain warnings he received from his ſtomach.

The ſkipper ſeeing his condition, very honeſtly reminded him of the cold ham and fowls, with a baſket of wine, which he had ordered to be ſent on board, and aſked if he would have the cloth laid below. He could not have choſen a more ſeaſonable opportunity of manifeſting his own diſintereſtedneſs. Peregrine made wry faces at the mention of food, bidding him, for Chriſt's ſake, talk no more on that ſubject. He then deſcended into the cabbin, and put the ſame queſtion to Mr. Jolter, who, he knew, entertained the ſame abhorrence for his propoſal; and meeting with the like reception from him, went between decks, and repeated his courteous proffer to the valet de

chambre and lacquey, who lay ſprawling in all the pangs of a double evacuation, and rejected his civility with the moſt horrible loathing. Thus baffled in all his kind endeavours, he ordered his boy to ſecure the proviſion in one of his own lockers, according to the cuſtom of the ſhip.

It being low water when they arrived on the French coaſt, the veſſel could not enter the harbour, and they were obliged to bring to, and wait for a boat, which in leſs than half an hour came along-ſide from the ſhore. Mr. Jolter now came upon deck, and ſnuffing up the French air with ſymptoms of infinite ſatisfaction, aſked of the boatmen, with the friendly appellation of *Mes enfans*, what they demanded for tranſporting him and his pupil with their baggage to the pier. But how was he diſconcerted, when thoſe polite, candid reaſonable watermen, demanded a Louis d'or for that ſervice! Peregrine with a ſarcaſtic ſneer, obſerved, that he already began to perceive the juſtice of his encomiums on the French; and the diſappointed governor could ſay nothing in his own vindication, but that they were debauched by their intercourſe with the inhabitants of Dover. His pupil, however, was ſo much offended at their extortion, that he abſolutely refuſed to employ them, even when they abated one half in their demand, and ſwore he would ſtay on board till the packet ſhould be able to enter the harbour, rather than encourage ſuch impoſition.

The maſter, who in all probability had ſome ſort of fellow-feeling with the boatmen, in vain repreſented, that he could not with ſafety lie to, or anchor upon a lee-ſhore; our hero having conſulted Pipes, anſwered, that he had hired his veſ-

ſel

ſel to tranſport him to Calais, and that he would oblige him to perform what he had undertaken.

The ſkipper, very much mortified at this peremptory reply, which was not over and above agreeable to Mr. Jolter, diſmiſſed the boat, notwithſtanding the ſollicitations and condeſcenſion of the watermen. Running a little farther in ſhore, they came to an anchor, and waited till there was water enough to float them over the bar. Then they ſtood into the harbour, and our gentleman, with his attendants and baggage, were landed on the pier by the ſailors, whom he liberally rewarded for their trouble.

He was immediately plied by a great number of porters, who, like ſo many hungry wolves, laid hold on his luggage, and began to carry it off piece-meal, without his order or direction. Incenſed at this officious inſolence, he commanded them to deſiſt, with many oaths and opprobrious terms that his anger ſuggeſted; and perceiving that one of them did not ſeem to pay any regard to what he ſaid, but marched off with his burden, he ſnatched a cudgel out of his lacquey's hand, and overtaking the fellow in a twinkling, brought him to the ground with one blow. He was inſtantly ſurrounded by the whole congregation of this *canaille*, who reſented the injury which their brother had ſuſtained, and would have taken immediate ſatisfaction of the aggreſſor, had not Pipes, ſeeing his maſter involved, brought the whole crew to his aſſiſtance, and exerted himſelf ſo manfully, that the enemy were obliged to retreat with many marks of defeat, and menaces of intereſting the commandant in their quarrel. Jolter, who knew and dreaded the power of the French governor, began to ſhake with ap-

prehenſion, when he heard their repeated threats; but they durſt not apply to this magiſtrate, who, upon a fair repreſentation of the caſe, would have puniſhed them ſeverely for their rapacious and inſolent behaviour. Peregrine, without further moleſtation, availed himſelf of his own attendants, who ſhouldered his baggage, and followed him to the gate, where they were ſtopt by the centinels, until their names ſhould be regiſtered.

Mr. Jolter, who had undergone this examination before, reſolved to profit by his experience, and cunningly repreſented his pupil as a young Engliſh lord. This intimation, ſupported by the appearance of his equipage, was no ſooner communicated to the officer, than he turned out the guard, and ordered his ſoldiers to reſt upon their arms, while his lordſhip paſſed in great ſtate to the *Lion d'Argent*, where he took up his lodging for the night, reſolving to ſet out for Paris next morning in a poſt-chaiſe.

The governor triumphed greatly in this piece of complaiſance and reſpect with which they had been honoured, and reſumed his beloved topic of diſcourſe, in applauding the method and ſubordination of the French government, which was better calculated for maintaining order and protecting the people, than any conſtitution upon earth. Of their courteous attention to ſtrangers, there needed no other proof than the compliment which had been paid to them, together with the governor's connivance at Peregrine's employing his own ſervants in carrying the baggage to the inn, contrary to the privilege of the inhabitants.

While

While he expatiated with a remarkable degree of ſelf-indulgence on this ſubject, the valet de chambre coming into the room interrupted his harangue, by telling his maſter, that their trunks and portmanteaus muſt be carried to the cuſtom-houſe, in order to be ſearched, and ſealed with lead, which muſt remain untouched until their arrival at Paris.

Peregrine made no objection to this practice, which was in itſelf reaſonable enough; but when he underſtood that the gate was beſieged by another multitude of porters, who inſiſted upon their right of carrying the goods, and alſo of fixing their own price, he abſolutely refuſed to comply with their demand. Nay he chaſtiſed ſome of the moſt clamorous among them with his foot, and told them, that if their cuſtom-houſe officers had a mind to examine his baggage, they might come to the inn for that purpoſe. The valet de chambre was abaſhed at this boldneſs of his maſter's behaviour, which the lacquey, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders, obſerved was *bien a l'Angloiſe*; while the governor repreſented it as an indignity to the whole nation, and endeavoured to perſwade his pupil to comply with the cuſtom of the place. But Peregrine's natural haughtineſs of diſpoſition hindered him from giving ear to Jolter's wholeſome advice; and in leſs than half an hour they obſerved a file of muſqueteers marching up to the gate. At ſight of this detachment the tutor trembled, the valet grew pale, and the lacquey croſſed himſelf; but our hero, without exhibiting any other ſymptoms than thoſe of indignation, met them on the threſhold, and with a ferocious air demanded their buſineſs. The corporal who commanded the file anſwered with great delibe-

ration, that he had orders to convey his baggage to the cuſtom-houſe; and ſeeing the trunks ſtanding in the entry, placed his men between them and the owner, while the porters that followed, took them up, and proceeded to the Douane without oppoſition.

Pickle was not mad enough to diſpute the authority of this meſſage; but, in order to gall, and ſpecify his contempt for thoſe who brought it, he called aloud to his valet, deſiring him, in French, to accompany his things, and ſee that none of his linnen and effects ſhould be ſtolen by the ſearchers. The corporal, mortified at this ſatirical inſinuation, darted a look of reſentment at the author, as if he had been intereſted for the glory of his nation; and told him, that he could perceive he was a ſtranger in France, or elſe he would have ſaved himſelf the trouble of ſuch a needleſs precaution.

CHAP. XXXVI.

He makes a fruitleſs attempt in gallantry; departs for Boulogne, *where he ſpends the evening with certain* Engliſh *exiles.*

HAVING thus yielded to the hand of power, he enquired if there was any other Engliſh company in the houſe; when underſtanding that a gentleman and lady lodged in the next apartment, and had beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe for Paris, he ordered Pipes to ingratiate himſelf with their footman, and, if poſſible, learn their names and condition, while he and Mr. Jolter, attended by the

the lacquey, took a turn round the ramparts, and viewed the particulars of the fortification.

Tom was ſo very ſucceſsful in his inquiry, that when his maſter returned, he was able to give him a very ſatisfactory account of his fellow-lodgers, in conſequence of having treated his brother with a bottle of wine. The people in queſtion were a gentleman and his lady lately arrived from England, in their way to Paris. The huſband was a man of good fortune, who had been a libertine in his youth, and a profeſſed declaimer againſt matrimony. He wanted neither ſenſe nor experience, and piqued himſelf in particular upon his art in avoiding the ſnares of the female ſex, in which he pretended to be deeply verſed. But, notwithſtanding all his caution and ſkill, he had lately fallen a ſacrifice to the attractions of an oyſter wench, who had found means to decoy him into the bands of wedlock; and, in order to evade the compliments and congratulations of his friends and acquaintance, he had come ſo far on a tour to Paris, where he intended to initiate his ſpouſe in the beau-monde. In the mean time he choſe to live upon the reſerve, becauſe her natural talents had as yet received but little cultivation; and he had not the moſt implicit confidence in her virtue and diſcretion, which, it ſeems, had like to have yielded to the addreſſes of an officer at Canterbury, who had made ſhift to inſinuate himſelf into her acquaintance and favour.

Peregrine's curioſity being inflamed by this information, he lounged about the yard, in hopes of ſeeing the Dulcinea who had captivated the old batchelor; and at length obſerving her at a window, took the liberty of bowing to her with

great reſpect. She returned the compliment with a curt'ſie, and appeared ſo decent in her dreſs and manner, that unleſs he had been previouſly informed of her former life and converſation, he never would have dreamt that her education was different from that of other ladies of faſhion; ſo eaſy it is to acquire that external deportment on which people of condition value themſelves ſo much. Not but that Mr. Pickle pretended to diſtinguiſh a certain vulgar audacity in her countenance, which in a lady of birth and fortune would have paſſed for an agreeable vivacity that enlivens the aſpect, and gives poignancy to every feature; but as ſhe poſſeſſed a pair of fine eyes, and a clear complexion overſpread with the glow of health, which never fails of recommending the owner, he could not help gazing at her with deſire, and forming the deſign of making a conqueſt of her heart. With this view, he ſent his compliments to her huſband, whoſe name was Hornbeck, with an intimation, that he propoſed to ſet out next day for Paris, and as he underſtood that he was reſolved upon the ſame journey, he ſhould be extremely glad of his company on the road, if he was not better engaged. Hornbeck, who in all probability did not chuſe to accommodate his wife with a ſquire of our heroe's appearance, ſent a civil anſwer to his meſſage, profeſſing infinite mortification at his being unable to embrace the favour of this kind offer, by reaſon of the indiſpoſition of his wife, who, he was afraid, would not be in a condition for ſome days to bear the fatigue of travelling. This rebuff, which Peregrine aſcribed to the huſband's jealouſy, ſtifled his project in embrio; he ordered his French ſervant to take a place for himſelf in the

the Diligence, where all his luggage was ſtowed, except a ſmall trunk with ſome linen and other neceſſaries that was fixed upon the poſt chaiſe which they hired of the landlord; and early next morning he and Mr. Jolter departed from Calais, attended by his valet de chambre and Pipes on horſeback. They proceeded without any accident as far as Boulogne, where they breakfaſted and viſited old father Graham, a Scottiſh gentleman of the governor's acquaintance, who had lived as a capuchin in that place for the ſpace of threeſcore years, and during that period conformed to all the auſterities of the order, with the moſt rigorous exactneſs; being equally remarkable for the frankneſs of his converſation, the humanity of his diſpoſition, and the ſimplicity of his manners. From Boulogne they took their departure about noon, and as they propoſed to ſleep that night at Abbe Ville, commanded the poſtillion to drive with extraordinary ſpeed. Perhaps it was well for his cattle that the axle-tree gave way, and the chaiſe of courſe overturned before they had travelled one third part of the ſtage.

This accident compelled them to return to the place from whence they had ſet out, and as they could not procure another convenience, they found themſelves under the neceſſity of ſtaying till their chaiſe could be refitted. Underſtanding that this operation would detain them a whole day, our young gentleman had recourſe to his patience, and demanded to know what they could have for dinner; the garcon or waiter thus queſtioned, vaniſhed in a moment, and immediately they were ſurprized with the appearance of a ſtrange figure, which from the extravagance of its dreſs and geſticulation, Peregrine miſtook for a mad-

man of the growth of France. This phantome (which, by the bye, happened to be no other than the cook) was a tall, long-legged, meagre, ſwarthy fellow, that ſtooped very much; his cheek-bones were remarkably raiſed, his noſe bent into the ſhape and ſize of a powder-horn, and the ſockets of his eyes as raw round the edges, as if the ſkin had been pared off. On his head he wore an handkerchief which had once been white, and now ſerved to cover the upper part of a black periwig, to which was attached a bag, at leaſt a foot ſquare, with a ſolitaire and roſe that ſtuck upon each ſide to his ear; ſo that he looked like a criminal on the pillory. His back was accommodated with a linen waiſtcoat, his hands adorned with long ruffles of the ſame piece, his middle was girded by an apron tucked up, that it might not conceal his white ſilk ſtockings rolled; and at his entrance he brandiſhed a bloody weapon full three feet in length. Peregrine, when he firſt ſaw him approach in this menacing attitude, put himſelf upon his guard, but being informed of his quality, peruſed his bill of fare, and having beſpoke three or four things for dinner, walked out with Mr. Jolter to view both towns, which they had not leiſure to conſider minutely before. In their return from the harbour they met with four or five gentlemen, all of whom ſeemed to look with an air of dejection, and perceiving our hero and his governor to be Engliſh by their dreſs, bowed with great reſpect as they paſſed. Pickle, who was naturally compaſſionate, felt an emotion of ſympathy; and ſeeing a perſon, who by his habit he judged to be one of their ſervants, accoſted him in Engliſh, and aſked who the gentlemen were. The lacquey gave him to underſtand

ſtand that they were his own countrymen, exiled from their native homes, in conſequence of their adherence to an unfortunate and ruined cauſe; and that they were gone to the ſea-ſide, according to their daily practice, in order to indulge their longing eyes, with a proſpect of the white cliffs of Albion, which they muſt never more approach.

Though our young gentleman differed widely from them in point of political principles, he was not one of thoſe enthuſiaſts who look upon every ſchiſm from the eſtabliſhed articles of faith, as damnable, and exclude the ſceptick from every benefit of humanity and chriſtian forgiveneſs: he could eaſily comprehend how a man of the moſt unblemiſhed morals might, by the prejudice of education, or indiſpenſible attachments, be ingaged in ſuch a blame-worthy and pernicious undertaking; and thought that they had already ſuffered ſeverely for their imprudence. He was affected with the account of their diurnal pilgrimage to the ſea-ſide, which he conſidered as a pathetic proof of their affliction, and inveſted Mr. Jolter with the agreeable office of going to them with a compliment in his name, and begging the honour of drinking a glaſs with them in the evening. They accepted the propoſal with great ſatisfaction and reſpectful acknowledgment, and in the afternoon waited upon the kind inviter, who treated them with coffee, and would have detained them to ſupper; but they intreated the favour of his company at the houſe which they frequented ſo earneſtly, that he yielded to their ſolicitations, and with his governor was conducted by them to the place, where they

they had provided an elegant repaſt, and regaled them with ſome of the beſt claret in France.

It was eaſy for them to perceive that their principal gueſt was no favourer of their ſtate maxims, and therefore they induſtriouſly avoided every ſubject of converſation which could give the leaſt offence; not but that they lamented their own ſituation, which cut them off from all their deareſt connexions, and doomed them to perpetual baniſhment from their families and friends: but they did not, even by the moſt diſtant hint, impeach the juſtice of that ſentence by which they were condemned; although one among them, who ſeemed to be about the age of thirty, wept bitterly over his misfortune, which had involved a beloved wife and three children in miſery and diſtreſs; and in the impatience of his grief, curſed his own fate with frantic imprecations. His companions, with a view of beguiling his ſorrow, and manifeſting their own hoſpitality at the ſame time, changed the topic of diſcourſe, and circulated the bumpers with great aſſiduity; ſo that all their cares were overwhelmed and forgotten, ſeveral drinking French catches were ſung, and mirth and good-fellowſhip prevailed.

In the midſt of this elevation, which commonly unlocks the moſt hidden ſentiment, and diſpels every conſideration of caution and conſtraint, one of the entertainers being more intoxicated than his fellows, propoſed a toaſt, to which Peregrine with ſome warmth excepted, as an unmannerly inſult. The other maintained his propoſition with indecent heat, and the diſpute beginning to grow very ſerious, the company interpoſed, and gave judgment againſt their friend,

who

who was ſo keenly reproached and rebuked for his impolite behaviour, that he retired in high dudgeon, threatning to relinquiſh their ſociety, and branding them with the appellation of apoſtates from the common cauſe. Mortified at the behaviour of their companion, thoſe that remained were earneſt in their apologies to their gueſts, whom they beſought to forgive his intemperance; aſſuring them with great confidence, that he would upon the recovery of his reflection, wait upon them in perſon, and aſk pardon for the umbrage he had given. Pickle was ſatisfied with their remonſtrances, reſumed his good humour, and the night being pretty far advanced, reſiſted all their importunities with which he was intreated to ſee another bottle go round, and was eſcorted to his own lodgings more than half ſeas over. Next morning about eight o'clock, he was waked by his valet de chambre, who told him that two of the gentlemen with whom he had ſpent the evening were in the houſe, and deſired the favour of being admitted into his chamber. He could not conceive the meaning of this extraordinary viſit, and ordering his man to ſhew them into his apartment, beheld the perſon who had affronted him enter with the gentleman who had reprehended his rudeneſs.

He who had given the offence, after having made an apology for diſturbing Mr. Pickle, told him that his friend there preſent had been with him early that morning, and propoſed the alternative of either fighting with him immediately, or coming to beg pardon for his unmannerly deportment over night; that though he had courage enough to face any man in the field in a righteous

righteous cauſe, he was not ſo brutal as to diſobey the dictates of his own duty and reflection, in conſequence of which, and not out of any regard to the other's menaces, which he deſpiſed, he had now taken the liberty of interrupting his repoſe, that he might, as ſoon as poſſible, atone for the injury he had done him, which he proteſted was the effect of intoxication alone, and begged his forgiveneſs accordingly. Our hero accepted of this acknowledgment very graciouſly, thanked the other gentleman for the gallant part he had acted in his behalf; and perceiving that his companion was a little irritated at his officious interpoſition, effected a reconciliation, by convincing him that what he had done was for the honour of the company. He then kept them to breakfaſt, expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing their ſituation altered for the better, and the chaiſe being repaired, took his leave of his entertainers, who came to wiſh him a good journey, and with his attendants left Boulogne for the ſecond time.

****

CHAP. XXXVII.

Proceeds for the capital. Takes up his lodging at Bernay, *where he is overtaken by Mr.* Hornbeck, *whoſe head he longs to fortify.*

DURING this day's expedition, Mr. Jolter took an opportunity of imparting to his pupil the remarks he had made upon the induſtry of the French, as an undeniable proof of which he bade him caſt his eyes around, and obſerve with what care every ſpot of ground was cultivated;

vated; and from the fertility of that province, which is reckoned the pooreſt in France, conceive the wealth and affluence of the nation in general. Peregrine, amazed as well as diſguſted at this infatuation, anſwered that what he aſcribed to induſtry, was the effect of meer wretchedneſs; the miſerable peaſants being obliged to plough up every inch of ground to ſatisfy their oppreſſive landlords, while they themſelves and their cattle looked like ſo many images of famine; that their extreme poverty was evident from the face of the country, on which there was not one incloſure to be ſeen, or any other object, except ſcanty crops of barley and oats, which could never reward the toil of the huſbandman; that their habitations were no better than paultry huts; that in twenty miles of extent, not one gentleman's houſe appeared; that nothing was more abject and forlorn than the attire of their country people; that the equipage of their travelling chaiſes was infinitely inferior to that of a dung-cart in England; and that the poſtilion who then drove their carriage, had neither ſtockings to his legs, nor a ſhirt to his back.

The governor finding his charge ſo intractable, reſolved to leave him in the midſt of his own ignorance and prejudice, and reſerve his obſervations for thoſe who would pay more deference to his opinion: and indeed this reſolution he had often made, and as often broke, in the tranſports of his zeal, that frequently hurried him out of the plan of conduct which in his cooler moments he had laid down. They halted for a refreſhment at Montreuil, and about ſeven in the evening arrived at a village called Bernay, where while they waited for freſh horſes, they were informed

formed by the landlord, that the gates of Abbe Ville were ſhut every night punctually at eight o'clock; ſo that it would be impoſſible for them to get admittance. He ſaid there was not another place of entertainment on the road where they could paſs the night; and therefore, as a friend, he adviſed them to ſtay at his houſe, where they would find the beſt of accommodation, and proceed upon their journey by times in the morning.

Mr. Jolter, though he had travelled on that road before, could not recollect whether or not mine hoſt ſpoke truth; but his remonſtrance being very plauſible, our hero determined to follow his advice, and being conducted into an apartment, aſked what they could have for ſupper. The landlord mentioned every thing that was eatable in the houſe, and the whole being engroſſed for the uſe of him and his attendants, he amuſed himſelf 'till ſuch time as it could be dreſſed, in ſtrolling about the houſe, which ſtands in a very rural ſituation. While he thus loitered away the time that hung heavy on his hands, another chaiſe arrived at the inn, and upon inquiry he found that the new comers were Mr. Hornbeck and his lady. The landlord, conſcious of his inability to entertain this ſecond company, came and begged with great humiliation that Mr. Pickle would ſpare them ſome part of their victuals he had beſpoke; but he refuſed to part with ſo much as the wing of a partridge, though at the ſame time he ſent his compliments to the ſtrangers, and giving them to underſtand how ill the houſe was provided for their reception, invited them to partake of his ſupper. Mr. Hornbeck, who was not deficient in point of politeneſs, and extremely

tremely well diſpoſed for a reliſhing meal, which he had reaſon to expect from the ſavoury ſteam that iſſued from the kitchen, could not reſiſt this ſecond inſtance of our young gentleman's civility, which he acknowledged by a meſſage, importing that he and his wife would do themſelves the pleaſure of profiting by his courteous offer. Peregrine's cheeks glowed when he found himſelf on the eve of being acquainted with Mrs. Hornbeck, of whoſe heart he had already made a conqueſt in imagination; and he forthwith ſet his invention at work, to contrive ſome means of defeating her huſband's vigilance.

When ſupper was ready, he in perſon gave notice to his gueſt, and leading the lady into his apartment, ſeated her in an elbow chair at the upper end of the table, ſqueezing her hand and darting a moſt inſidious glance at the ſame time. This abrupt behaviour he practiſed on the preſumption, that a lady of her breeding was not to be addreſſed with the tedious forms that muſt be obſerved in one's advances to a perſon of birth and genteel education. In all probability his calculation was juſt, for Mrs. Hornbeck gave no ſigns of diſcontent at this ſort of treatment, but on the contrary, ſeemed to conſider it as a proof of the young gentleman's regard; and though ſhe did not venture to open her mouth three times during the whole repaſt, ſhe ſhewed herſelf particularly well ſatisfied with her entertainer, by ſundry ſly and ſignificant looks, while her huſband's eyes were directed another way, and divers loud peals of laughter, ſignifying her approbation of the ſallies which he uttered in the courſe of their converſation. Her ſpouſe began to be very uneaſy at the frank demeanour of his yoke-

fellow,

fellow, whom he endeavoured to check in her vivacity, by aſſuming a ſeverity of aſpect; but whether ſhe obeyed the dictates of her own diſpoſition, which, perhaps, was merry and unreaſerved, or wanted to puniſh Mr. Hornbeck for his jealouſy of temper; certain it is, her gaiety increaſed to ſuch a degree, that her huſband was grievouſly alarmed and incenſed at her conduct, and reſolved to make her ſenſible of his diſpleaſure, by treading in ſecret upon her toes. He was, however, ſo diſconcerted by his indignation, that he miſtook his mark, and applied the ſharp heel of his ſhoe to the ſide of Mr. Jolter's foot, comprehending his little toe that was ſtudded with an angry corn, which he invaded with ſuch a ſudden jerk, that the governor, unable to endure the torture in ſilence, ſtarted up, and dancing on the floor, roared hideouſly with repeated bellowings, to the unſpeakable enjoyment of Peregrine and the lady, who laughed themſelves almoſt into convulſions at the joke. Hornbeck, confounded at the miſtake he had committed, begged pardon of the injured tutor with great contrition, proteſting that the blow he had ſo unfortunately received, was intended for an ugly cur, which he thought had poſted himſelf under the table. It was lucky for him that there was actually a dog in the room, to juſtify this excuſe, which Jolter admitted with the tears running over his cheeks, and the œconomy of the table was recompoſed.

As ſoon, however, as the ſtrangers could with decency withdraw, this ſuſpicious huſband took his leave of the youth, on pretence of being fatigued with his journey, after having, by way of compliment, propoſed that they ſhould travel together

gether next day; and Peregrine handed the lady to her chamber, where he wiſhed her good night with another warm ſqueeze, which ſhe returned. This favourable hint made his heart bound with a tranſport of joy; he lay in wait for an opportunity of declaring himſelf, and ſeeing the huſband go down into the yard with a candle, glided ſoftly into his apartment, where he found her almoſt undreſſed. Impelled by the impetuoſity of his paſſion, which was ſtill more enflamed by her preſent luſcious appearance, and encouraged by the approbation ſhe had already expreſſed, he ran towards her with eagerneſs, crying, "Zounds! madam, your charms are irreſiſtible!" and without further ceremony would have claſped her in his arms, had not ſhe begged him for the love of God to retire, for ſhould Mr. Hornbeck return and find him there, ſhe would be undone for ever. He was not ſo blinded by his paſſion, but that he ſaw the reaſonableneſs of her fear, and as he could not pretend to crown his wiſhes at that interview, he avowed himſelf her lover, aſſured her that he would exhauſt his whole invention in finding a proper opportunity for throwing himſelf at her feet; and in the mean time he raviſhed ſundry ſmall favours, which ſhe in the hurry of her fright could not withold from his impudence of addreſs. Having thus happily ſettled the preliminaries, he withdrew to his own chamber, and ſpent the whole night in contriving ſtratagems to elude the jealous caution of his fellow-traveller.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

They ſet out in company, breakfaſt at Abbe Ville, *dine at* Amiens, *and about eleven o'clock arrive at* Chantilly, *where* Peregrine *executes a plan which he had concerted upon* Hornbeck.

THE whole company by agreement roſe and departed before day, and breakfaſted at Abbe Ville, where they became acquainted with the fineſſe of their Bernay landlord, who had impoſed upon them, in affirming that they would not have been admitted after the gates were ſhut. From thence they proceeded to Amiens, where they dined and were peſtered by begging friars; and the roads being deep, it was eleven o'clock at night before they reached Chantilly, where they found ſupper already dreſſed, in conſequence of having diſpatched the valet de chambre before them on horſeback.

The conſtitution of Hornbeck being very much impaired by a life of irregularity, he found himſelf ſo fatigued with this day's journey, which amounted to upwards of an hundred miles, that when he ſat down at table, he could ſcarce ſit upright; and in leſs than three minutes began to nod in his chair. Peregrine, who had foreſeen and provided for this occaſion, adviſed him to exhilarate his ſpirits with a glaſs of wine; and the propoſal being embraced, tipt his valet de chambre the wink, who, according to the inſtructions he had received, qualified the Burgundy with thirty drops of laudanum, which this unfortunate huſband ſwallowed in one glaſs. The doſe co-

co-operating with his former drowſineſs, lulled him ſo faſt aſleep, as it were inſtantaneouſly, that it was found neceſſary to convey him to his own chamber, where his footman undreſſed and put him to bed. Nor was Jolter (naturally of a ſluggiſh diſpoſition) able to reſiſt his propenſity to ſleep, without ſuffering divers dreadful yawns, which encouraged his pupil to adminiſter the ſame doſe to him, which had operated ſo ſucceſsfully upon the other Argus. This cordial had not ſuch a gentle effect upon the rugged organs of Jolter as upon the more delicate nerves of Hornbeck; but diſcovered itſelf in certain involuntary ſtartings, and convulſive motions in the muſcles of his face; and when his nature at length yielded to the power of this medicine, he ſounded the trumpet ſo loud through his noſtrils, that our adventurer was afraid the noiſe would wake his other patient, and conſequently prevent the accompliſhment of his aim. The governor was therefore committed to the care of Pipes, who lugged him into the next room, and having ſtripped off his cloaths, tumbled him into his neſt, while the two lovers remained at full liberty to indulge their mutual paſſion.

Peregrine, in the impatience of his inclination, would have finiſhed the fate of Hornbeck immediately; but his inamorata diſapproved of his intention, and repreſented that their being together by themſelves for any length of time, would be obſerved by her ſervant, who was kept as a ſpy upon her actions; ſo that they had recourſe to another ſcheme, which was executed in this manner: He conducted her into her own apartment, in preſence of her footman, who lighted them thither, and wiſhing her good reſt, returned

to his own chamber, where he waited till every thing was quiet in the houſe; then ſtealing ſoftly to her door, which had been left open for his admiſſion in the dark, he found the huſband ſtill ſecure in the embraces of ſleep, and the lady in a looſe gown, ready to ſeal his happineſs. He conveyed her to his own chamber; but his guilty paſſion was not gratified.

The opium which had been given to Jolter, together with the wine he had drank, produced ſuch a perturbation in his fancy, that he was viſited with horrible dreams, and among other miſerable ſituations, imagined himſelf in danger of periſhing in the flames, which he thought had taken hold on his apartment. This viſion made ſuch an impreſſion upon his faculties, that he alarmed the whole houſe with the repeated cries of *Fire! Fire!* and even leaped out of his bed, though he ſtill continued faſt aſleep. The lovers were very diſagreeably diſturbed by this dreadful exclamation, and Mrs. Hornbeck running in great confuſion to the door, had the mortification to ſee the footman with a light in his hand, enter her huſband's chamber in order to give him notice of this accident. She knew that ſhe would be inſtantly miſſed, and could eaſily divine the conſequence, unleſs her invention could immediately trump up ſome plauſible excuſe for her abſence.

Women are naturally fruitful of expedients in caſes of ſuch emergency; ſhe employed but a few ſeconds in recollection, and ruſhing directly towards the apartment of the governor, who ſtill continued to hollow in the ſame note, exclaimed in a ſcreaming tone, "Lord have mercy upon us! where! where!" By this time, all the ſervants

vants were aſſembled in ſtrange attire; Peregrine burſt into Jolter's room, and ſeeing him ſtalking in his ſhirt with his eyes ſhut, beſtowed ſuch a ſlap upon his back, as in a moment diſſolved his dream, and reſtored him to the uſe of his ſenſes. He was aſtoniſhed and aſhamed at being diſcovered in ſuch an indecent attitude; and taking refuge under the cloaths, aſked pardon of all preſent for the diſturbance he had occaſioned; ſoliciting with great humility the forgiveneſs of the lady, who, to a miracle, counterfeited the utmoſt agitation of terror and ſurprize. Mean while, Hornbeck being awakened by the repeated efforts of his man, no ſooner underſtood that his wife was miſſing, than all the chimera's of jealouſy taking poſſeſſion of his imagination, he ſtarted up in a ſort of frenzy, and ſnatching his ſword, flew ſtraight to Peregrine's chamber, where though he found not that which he looked for, he unluckily perceived an under petticoat, which his wife had forgot in the hurry of her retreat. This diſcovery added fuel to the flame of his reſentment. He ſeized the fatal proof of his diſhonour, and meeting his ſpouſe in her return to bed, preſented it to her view, ſaying, with a moſt expreſſive countenance, "Madam, you have dropped your under-petticoat in the next room." Mrs. Hornbeck, who inherited from nature a moſt admirable preſence of mind, looked earneſtly at the object in queſtion, and with incredible ſerenity of countenance, affirmed that the petticoat muſt belong to the houſe, for ſhe had none ſuch in her poſſeſſion. Peregrine, who walked behind her, hearing this aſſeveration, immediately interpoſed, and pulling Hornbeck by the ſleeve into his chamber, "Gads-zooks! ſaid

he, what buſineſs had you with that petticoat? Can't you let a young fellow enjoy a little amour with an innkeeper's daughter, without expoſing his infirmities to your wife? Pſhaw! that's ſo malicious, becauſe you have quitted theſe adventures yourſelf, to ſpoil the ſport of other people." The poor huſband was ſo confounded at the effrontery of his wife, and this cavalier declaration of the young man, that his faith began to waver; he diſtruſted his own conſcious diffidence of temper, which that he might not expoſe, he expreſſed no doubts of Peregrine's veracity, but aſking pardon for the miſtake he had committed, retired. He was not yet ſatisfied with the behaviour of his ingenious helpmate, but on the contrary determined to enquire more minutely into the circumſtances of this adventure; which turned out ſo little to his ſatisfaction, that he ordered his ſervant to get every thing ready for his departure by break of day; and when our adventurer roſe next morning, he found that his fellow travellers were gone above three hours, though they had agreed to ſtay all the forenoon, with a view of ſeeing the prince of Conde's palace, and to proceed all together for Paris in the afternoon.

Peregrine was a little chagrined, when he underſtood that he was ſo ſuddenly deprived of this untaſted morſel; and Jolter could not conceive the meaning of their abrupt and uncivil diſappearance, which, after many profound conjectures, he accounted for, by ſuppoſing that Hornbeck was ſome ſharper who had run away with an heireſs, whom he found it neceſſary to conceal from the enquiry of her friends.

The pupil, who was well aſſured of the true motive, allowed his governor to enjoy the triumph

of

of his own penetration, and conſoled himſelf with the hope of ſeeing his Dulcinea again at ſome of the public places in Paris, which he propoſed to frequent. Thus comforted, he viſited the magnificent ſtables and palace of Chantilly, and immediately after dinner ſet out for Paris, where they arrived in the evening, and hired apartments at an hotel in the Fauxbourg St. Germaine, not far from the playhouſe.

CHAP. XXXIX.

He is involved in an adventure at Paris, *and taken priſoner by the city-guard. Becomes acquainted with a* French *nobleman, who introduces him into the* beau monde.

THEY were no ſooner ſettled in theſe lodgings, than our hero wrote to his uncle an account of their ſafe arrival, and ſent another letter to his friend Gauntlet, with a very tender billet incloſed for his dear Emilia, to whom he repeated all his former vows of conſtancy and love.

The next care that ingroſſed him was that of beſpeaking ſeveral ſuits of cloaths ſuitable to the French mode, and in the mean time he never appeared abroad, except in the Engliſh coffee-houſe, where he ſoon became acquainted with ſome of his own countrymen, who were at Paris on the ſame footing with himſelf. The third evening after his journey, he was engaged in a party of thoſe young ſparks, at the houſe of a noted Traiteur, whoſe wife was remarkably handſome, and otherwiſe extremely well qualified for alluring cuſtomers to her houſe. To this lady our young

gentleman was introduced as a ſtranger freſh from England; and he was charmed with her perſonal accompliſhments, as well as with the freedom and gaiety of her converſation. Her frank deportment perſuaded him that ſhe was one of thoſe kind creatures, who granted favours to the beſt bidder; on this ſuppoſition he began to be ſo importunate in his addreſſes, that the fair Burgeoiſe was compelled to cry aloud in defence of her own virtue. Her huſband ran immediately to her aſſiſtance, and finding her in a very alarming ſituation, flew upon her raviſher with ſuch fury, that he was fain to quit his prey, and turn againſt the exaſperated Traiteur, whom he puniſhed without mercy for his impudent intruſion. The lady ſeeing her yokefellow treated with ſo little reſpect, eſpouſed his cauſe, and fixing her nails in his antagoniſt's face, ſcarified all one ſide of his noſe. The noiſe of this encounter brought all the ſervants of the houſe to the reſcue of their maſter, and Peregrine's company oppoſing them, a general battle enſued, in which the French were totally routed, the wife inſulted, and the huſband kicked down ſtairs.

The publican, enraged at the indignity which had been offered to him and his family, went out into the ſtreet, and implored the protection of the guet or city guard, which having heard his complaint, fixed their bayonets and ſurrounded the door, to the number of twelve or fourteen. The young gentlemen, fluſhed with their ſucceſs, and conſidering the ſoldiers as ſo many London watchmen, whom they had often put to flight, drew their ſwords, and ſallied out, with Peregrine at their head. Whether the guard reſpected them as foreigners, or inexperienced youths intoxicated with

with liquor, they opened to right and left, and gave them room to paſs, without oppoſition. This complaiſance, which was the effect of compaſſion, being miſinterpreted by the Engliſh leader, he out of mere wantonneſs attempted to trip up the heels of the ſoldier that ſtood next him, but failed in the execution, and received a blow on his breaſt with the butt end of a fuſil, that made him ſtagger ſeveral paces backward. Incenſed at this audacious application, the whole company charged the detachment ſword in hand, and after an obſtinate engagement, in which divers wounds were given and received, every ſoul of them was taken, and conveyed to the main-guard. The commanding officer being made acquainted with the circumſtances of the quarrel, in conſideration of their youth and national ferocity, for which the French make large allowances, ſet them all at liberty, after having gently rebuked them for the irregularity and inſolence of their conduct: ſo that all our hero acquired by his gallantry and courage, was a number of ſcandalous marks upon his viſage that confined him a whole week to his chamber. It was impoſſible to conceal this diſaſter from Mr. Jolter, who having obtained intelligence of the particulars, did not fail to remonſtrate againſt the raſhneſs of the adventure, which he obſerved muſt have been fatal to them, had their enemies been other than Frenchmen, who, of all people under the ſun, moſt rigorouſly obſerve the laws of hoſpitality.

As the governor's acquaintance lay chiefly among Iriſh and Engliſh prieſts, and a ſet of low people who live by making themſelves neceſſary to ſtrangers, either in teaching the French language, or executing ſmall commiſſions with which

they are intruſted, he was not the moſt proper perſon in the world for regulating the taſte of a young gentleman who travelled for improvement, in expectation of making a figure one day in his own country. Being conſcious of his own incapacity, he contented himſelf with the office of a ſteward, and kept a faithful account of all the money that was diſburſed in the courſe of their family expence: not but that he was acquainted with all the places which were viſited by ſtrangers on their firſt arrival at Paris; and knew to a liard what was commonly given to the Swiſs of each remarkable hotel; though, with reſpect to the curious painting and ſtatuary that every where abound in that metropolis, he was more ignorant than the domeſtic that attends for a livre a day.

In ſhort, Mr. Jolter could give a very good account of the ſtages on the road, and ſave the expence of Antonini's detail of the curioſities in Paris; he was a connoiſſeur in ordinaries, from twelve to five and thirty livres, knew all the rates of a Fiacre and Remiſe, could diſpute with a Tailleur or Traiteur upon the articles of his bill, and ſcold the ſervants in tolerable French. But the laws, cuſtoms and genius of the people, the characters of individuals, and ſcenes of poliſhed life, were ſubjects which he had neither opportunities to obſerve, inclination to conſider, nor diſcernment to diſtinguiſh. All his maxims were the ſuggeſtions of pedantry and prejudice; ſo that his perception was obſcured, his judgment biaſſed, his addreſs awkward, and his converſation abſurd and unentertaining: yet ſuch as I have repreſented this tutor, is the greateſt part of thoſe animals who lead raw boys about the world, under the denomination

mination of travelling governors. Peregrine, therefore, being perfectly well acquainted with the extent of Mr. Jolter's abilities, never dreamt of conſulting him in the diſpoſition of his conduct, but parcelled out his time according to the dictates of his own reflection, and the information and direction of his companions, who had lived longer in France, and conſequently were better acquainted with the pleaſures of the place.

As ſoon as he was in a condition to appear à la Françoiſe, he hired a genteel chariot by the month, made the tour of the Luxembourg gallery, Palais Royal, all the remarkable hotels, churches, and celebrated places in Paris; viſited St. Cloud, Marli, Verſailles, Trianon, St. Germain, and Fountainbleau; enjoyed the opera, maſquerades, Italian and French comedy; and ſeldom failed of appearing in the public walks, in hopes of meeting with Mrs. Hornbeck, or ſome adventure ſuited to his romantic diſpoſition. He never doubted that his perſon would attract the notice of ſome diſtinguiſhed inamorata, and was vain enough to believe that few female hearts were able to reſiſt the artillery of his accompliſhments, ſhould he once find an opportunity of planting it to advantage. He preſented himſelf, however, at all the *Spectacles* for many weeks, without reaping the fruits of his expectation; and began to entertain a very indifferent idea of the French diſcernment, which had overlooked him ſo long, when one day in his way to the opera, his chariot was ſtopped by an *embarras* in the ſtreet, occaſioned by two peaſants, who having driven their carts againſt each other, quarrelled, and went to loggerheads on the ſpot. Such a rencounter is ſo uncommon in France, that the people

ſhut up their ſhops, and from their windows threw cold water upon the combatants, with a view of putting an end to the battle, which was maintained with great fury and very little ſkill, until one of them receiving an accidental fall, the other took the advantage of this misfortune, and faſtening upon him as he lay, began to thump the pavement with his head. Our hero's equipage being detained cloſe by the field of this contention, Pipes could not bear to ſee the laws of boxing ſo ſcandalouſly tranſgreſſed, and leaping from his ſtation, pulled the offender from his antagoniſt, whom he raiſed up, and in the Engliſh language, encouraged to a ſecond eſſay, inſtructing him at the ſame time, by clenching his fiſts according to art, and putting himſelf in a proper attitude. Thus confirmed, the enraged carman ſprung upon his foe, and in all appearance would have effectually revenged the injury he had ſuſtained, if he had not been prevented by the interpoſition of a lacquey belonging to a nobleman, whoſe coach was obliged to halt in conſequence of the diſpute. This footman, who was diſtinguiſhed by a cane, deſcending from his poſt, without the leaſt ceremony or expoſtulation, began to employ his weapon upon the head and ſhoulders of the peaſant who had been patronized by Pipes; upon which Thomas reſenting ſuch ungenerous behaviour, beſtowed ſuch a ſtomacher upon the officious intermeddler, as diſcompoſed the whole œconomy of his entrails, and obliged him to diſcharge the interjection Ah! with demonſtrations of great anguiſh and amazement. The other two footmen who ſtood behind the coach, ſeeing their fellow-ſervant ſo inſolently aſſaulted, flew to his aſſiſtance, and rained a moſt diſagreeable ſhower upon

upon the head of his aggreſſor, who had no means of diverſion or defence. Peregrine, tho' he did not approve of Tom's conduct, could not bear to ſee him ſo roughly handled, eſpecially as he thought his own honour concerned in the fray, and therefore quitting his machine, came to the reſcue of his attendant, and charged his adverſaries ſword in hand. Two of them no ſooner perceived this reinforcement, than they betook themſelves to flight; and Pipes having twiſted the cane out of the hands of the third, belaboured him ſo unmercifully, that our hero thought proper to interpoſe his authority in his behalf. The common people ſtood aghaſt at this unprecedented boldneſs of Pickle, who underſtanding that the perſon whoſe ſervants he had diſciplined, was a general and prince of the blood, went up to the coach, and aſked pardon for what he had done, imputing his own behaviour to his ignorance of the other's quality. The old nobleman accepted of his apology with great politeneſs, thanking him for the trouble he had taken to reform the manners of his domeſtics; and gueſſing from our youth's appearance that he was ſome ſtranger of condition, very courteouſly invited him into the coach, on the ſuppoſition that they were both going to the opera. Pickle gladly embraced this opportunity of becoming acquainted with a perſon of ſuch rank, and ordering his own chariot to follow, accompanied the count to his *loge*, where he converſed with him during the whole entertainment.

He ſoon perceived that Peregrine was not deficient in ſpirit or ſenſe, and ſeemed particularly pleaſed with his engaging manner and eaſy deportment, qualifications for which the Engliſh

nation is by no means remarkable in France, and therefore the more conſpicuous and agreeable in the character of our hero, whom the nobleman carried home that ſame evening, and introduced to his lady and ſeveral perſons of faſhion who ſupped at his houſe. Peregrine was quite captivated by their affable behaviour and the vivacity of their diſcourſe; and after having been honoured with particular marks of conſideration, took his leave, fully determined to cultivate ſuch a valuable acquaintance.

His vanity ſuggeſted, that now the time was come when he ſhould profit by his talents among the fair ſex, on whom he reſolved to employ his utmoſt art and addreſs. With this view he aſſiduouſly engaged in all parties to which he had acceſs by means of his noble friend, who let ſlip no opportunity of gratifying his ambition. He for ſome time ſhared in all his amuſements, and was entertained in many of the beſt families of France; but he did not long enjoy that elevation of hope which had flattered his imagination. He ſoon perceived that it would be impoſſible to maintain the honourable connexions he had made, without engaging every day at quadrille, or in other words, loſing his money; for every perſon of rank, whether male or female, was a profeſſed gameſter, who knew and practiſed all the fineſſe of the art, of which he was entirely ignorant. Beſides, he began to find himſelf a meer novice in French gallantry, which is ſupported by an amazing volubility of tongue, an obſequious and incredible attention to trifles, a ſurpriſing faculty of laughing out of pure complaiſance, and a nothingneſs of converſation, which he could never attain. In ſhort, our hero, who among his own

coun-

countrymen would have paſſed for a ſprightly entertaining fellow, was conſidered in the brilliant aſſemblies of France as a youth of a very phlegmatic diſpoſition. No wonder then that his pride was mortified at his own want of importance, which he did not fail to aſcribe to their defect in point of judgment and taſte: he conceived a diſguſt at the mercenary conduct, as well as the ſhallow intellects of the ladies; and after he had ſpent ſome months, and a round ſum of money, in fruitleſs attendance and addreſſes, he fairly quitted the purſuit, and conſoled himſelf with the converſation of a merry *Fille de joye*, whoſe good graces he acquired by an allowance of twenty Louis per month. That he might the more eaſily afford this expence, he diſmiſſed his chariot and French lacquey at the ſame time.

He then entered himſelf in a noted academy, in order to finiſh his exerciſes, and contracted an acquaintance with a few ſenſible people, whom he diſtinguiſhed at the coffee houſe and ordinary to which he reſorted, and who contributed not a little to the improvement of his knowledge and taſte; for, prejudice apart, it muſt be owned that France abounds with men of conſummate honour, profound ſagacity, and the moſt liberal education. From the converſation of ſuch, he obtained a diſtinct idea of their government and conſtitution; and though he could not help admiring the excellent order and œconomy of their police, the reſult of all his inquiries was ſelf-congratulation on his title to the privileges of a Britiſh ſubject. Indeed this invaluable birth-right was rendered conſpicuous by ſuch flagrant occurrences, which fell every day almoſt under his obſervation, that nothing but the groſſeſt prejudice could diſpute its exiſtence.

CHAP. XL.

Acquires a diſtinct idea of the French *government; quarrels with a mouſquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquiſhes, after having puniſhed him for interfering in his amorous recreations.*

AMONG many other inſtances of the ſame nature, I believe it will not be amiſs to exhibit a few ſpecimens of their adminiſtration, which happened during his abode at Paris, that thoſe who have not the opportunity of obſerving for themſelves, or are in danger of being influenced by miſrepreſentation, may compare their own condition with that of their neighbours, and do juſtice to the conſtitution under which they live.

A lady of diſtinguiſhed character having been lampooned by ſome obſcure ſcribler, who could not be diſcovered, the miniſtry in conſequence of her complaint, ordered no fewer than five and twenty abbés to be apprehended and ſent to the Baſtile, on the maxim of Herod, when he commanded the innocents to be murthered, hoping that the principal object of his cruelty would not eſcape in the general calamity; and the friends of thoſe unhappy priſoners durſt not even complain of the unjuſt perſecution, but ſhrugged up their ſhoulders, and in ſilence deplored their misfortune, uncertain whether or not they ſhould ever ſet eyes on them again.

About the ſame time, a gentleman of family, who had been oppreſſed by a certain powerful duke that lived in the neighbourhood, found means

means to be introduced to the king, who receiving his petition very graciouſly, aſked in what regiment he ſerved; and when the memorialiſt anſwered, that he had not the honour of being in the ſervice, returned the paper unopened, and refuſed to hear one circumſtance of his complaint; ſo that far from being redreſſed, he remained more than ever expoſed to the tyranny of his oppreſſors: nay, ſo notorious is the diſcouragement of all thoſe who preſume to live independent of court-favour and connexions, that one of the gentlemen, whoſe friendſhip Peregrine cultivated, frankly owned he was in poſſeſſion of a moſt romantic place in one of the provinces, and deeply enamoured of a country life; and yet he durſt not reſide upon his own eſtate, leſt by ſlackening in his attendance upon the great, who honoured him with their protection, he ſhould fall a prey to ſome rapacious intendant.

As for the common people, they are ſo much inured to the ſcourge and inſolence of power, that every ſhabby ſubaltern, every beggarly cadet of the nobleſſe, every low retainer to the court, inſults and injures them with impunity. A certain Ecuyer, or horſe-dealer, belonging to the king, being one day under the hands of a barber, who happened to cut the head of a pimple on his face, he ſtarted up, and drawing his ſword wounded him deſperately in the ſhoulder. The poor tradeſman, hurt as he was, made an effort to retire, and was followed by this barbarous aſſaſſin, who, not contented with the vengeance he had taken, plunged his ſword a ſecond time into his body, and killed him on the ſpot. Having performed this inhuman exploit, he dreſſed himſelf

ſelf with great deliberation, and going to Verſailles, immediately obtained a pardon for what he had done; triumphing in his brutality with ſuch inſolence, that the very next time he had occaſion to be ſhaved he ſat with his ſword ready drawn, in order to repeat the murder, in caſe the barber ſhould commit the ſame miſtake. Yet ſo tamed are thoſe poor people to ſubjection, that when Peregrine mentioned this aſſaſſination to his own trimmer, with expreſſions of horror and deteſtation, the infatuated wretch replied, that without all doubt it was a misfortune, but it proceeded from the gentleman's paſſion; and obſerved, by way of encomium on the government, that ſuch vivacity is never puniſhed in France.

A few days after this outrage was committed, our youth, who was a profeſſed enemy to all oppreſſion, being in one of the firſt loges at the comedy, was eye-witneſs of an adventure which filled him with indignation: a tall, ferocious fellow, in the parterre, without the leaſt provocation, but prompted by the meer wantonneſs of pride, took hold of the hat of a very decent young man who happened to ſtand before him, and twirled it round upon his head. The party thus offended turned to his aggreſſor, and civilly aſked the reaſon of ſuch treatment; but he received no anſwer; and when he looked the other way, the inſult was repeated: upon which he expreſſed his reſentment as became a man of ſpirit, and deſired the offender to walk out with him. No ſooner did he thus ſignify his intention, than his adverſary, ſwelling with rage, cocked his hat fiercely in his face, and fixing his hands in his ſides, pronounced with the moſt imperious tone,

" Heark

"Heark ye, Mr. Round Periwig, you muſt know that I am a mouſquetaire." Scarce had this awful word eſcaped from his lips, when the blood forſook the lips of the poor challenger, who with the moſt abject ſubmiſſion begged pardon for his preſumption, and with difficulty obtained it, on condition that he ſhould immediately quit the place. Having thus exerciſed his authority, he turned to one of his companions, and with an air of diſdainful ridicule, told him he was like to have had an affair with a Bourgois; adding, by way of heightening the irony, "Egad! believe he's a phyſician."

Our hero was ſo much ſhocked and irritated at this licentious behaviour, that he could not ſuppreſs his reſentment, which he manifeſted, by ſaying to this Hector, "Sir, a phyſician may be a man of honour." To this remonſtrance, which was delivered with a very ſignificant countenance, the mouſquetaire made no other reply, but that of ecchoing his aſſertion with a loud laugh, in which he was joined by his confederates. Peregrine glowing with reſentment, called him a *Fanfaron*, and withdrew in expectation of being followed into the ſtreet. The other underſtood the hint, and a rencounter muſt have enſued, had not the officer of the guard, who overheard what paſſed, prevented their meeting by putting the mouſquetaire immediately under arreſt. Our young gentleman waited at the door of the parterre, until he was informed of this interpoſition, and then went home very much chagrined at his diſappointment; for he was an utter ſtranger to fear and diffidence on thoſe occaſions, and had ſet his heart upon chaſtiſing the inſolence

of

of this bully, who had treated him with ſuch diſreſpect.

This adventure was not ſo private but that it reached the ears of Mr. Jolter by the canal of ſome Engliſh gentlemen who were preſent when it happened; and the governor, who entertained a moſt dreadful idea of the mouſquetaires, being alarmed at a quarrel, the conſequence of which might be fatal to his charge, waited on the Britiſh embaſſador, and begged he would take Peregrine under his immediate protection. His excellency having heard the circumſtances of the diſpute, ſent one of his gentlemen to invite the youth to dinner; and after having aſſured him that he might depend upon his countenance and regard, repreſented the raſhneſs and impetuoſity of his conduct ſo much to his conviction, that he promiſed to act more circumſpectly for the future, and drop all thoughts of the mouſquetaire from that moment.

A few days after he had taken this laudable reſolution, Pipes who had carried a billet to his miſtreſs, informed him, that he had perceived a laced hat lying upon a marble ſlab in her apartment; and that when ſhe came out of her own chamber to receive the letter, ſhe appeared in manifeſt diſorder.

From theſe hints of intelligence, our young gentleman ſuſpected, or rather made no doubt of her infidelity; and being by this time well nigh cloyed with poſſeſſion, was not ſorry to find that ſhe had given him cauſe to renounce her correſpondence. That he might therefore detect her in the very breach of duty, and at the ſame time puniſh the gallant who had the preſumption to invade

invade his territories, he concerted with himſelf a plan which was executed in this manner: During his next interview with his Dulcinea, far from diſcovering the leaſt ſign of jealouſy or diſcontent, he affected the appearance of extraordinary fondneſs; and after having ſpent the afternoon with the ſhew of uncommon ſatisfaction, told her he was engaged in a party for Fontainbleau, and would ſet out from Paris that ſame evening; ſo that he ſhould not have the pleaſure of ſeeing her again for ſome days.

The lady, who was very well verſed in the arts of her occupation, pretended to receive this piece of news with great affliction, and conjured him with ſuch marks of real tenderneſs, to return as ſoon as poſſible to her longing arms, that he went away almoſt convinced of her ſincerity. Determined however to proſecute his ſcheme, he actually departed from Paris with two or three gentlemen of his acquaintance, who had hired a Remiſe for a jaunt to Verſailles; and having accompanied them as far as the village of Paſſé, returned in the duſk of the evening on foot.

He waited impatiently till midnight, and then arming himſelf with a caſe of pocket piſtols, and attended by truſty Tom with a cudgel in his hand, repaired to the lodgings of his ſuſpected inamorata Having given Pipes his cue, he knocked gently at the door, which was no ſooner opened by the lacquey than he bolted in, before the fellow could recollect himſelf from the confuſion occaſioned by his unexpected appearance; and leaving Tom to guard the door, ordered the trembling valet to light him up ſtairs into his lady's apartment. The firſt object that preſented itſelf

itſelf to his view, when he entered the anti-chamber, was a ſword upon the table, which he immediately ſeized, exclaiming in a loud and menacing voice, that his miſtreſs was falſe, and then in bed with another gallant, whom he would inſtantly put to death. This declaration, confirmed by many terrible oaths, he calculated for the hearing of his rival, who, underſtanding his ſanguinary purpoſe, ſtarted up in great trepidation, and, naked as he was, dropped from the balcony into the ſtreet, while Peregrine thundered at the door for admittance; and gueſſing his deſign, gave him an opportunity of making this precipitate retreat. Pipes, who ſtood centinel at the door, obſerving the fugitive deſcend, attacked him with his cudgel, and ſweating him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, at laſt committed him to the guet, by whom he was conveyed to the officer in duty in a moſt diſgraceful and deplorable condition.

Mean while, Peregrine having burſt open the chamber door, found the lady in the utmoſt dread and conſternation, and the ſpoils of her favourite ſcattered about the room; but his reſentment was doubly gratified, when he learnt upon enquiry, that the perſon who had been ſo diſagreeably interrupted, was no other than that individual mouſquetaire with whom he had quarreled at the comedy. He upbraided the nymph with her perfidy and ingratitude, and telling her that ſhe muſt not expect the continuance of his regard, or the appointments which ſhe had hitherto enjoyed from his bounty, went home to his own lodgings, overjoyed at the iſſue of the adventure.

The

The ſoldier, exaſperated at the diſgrace he had undergone, as well as at the outragious inſult of the Engliſh valet, whom he believed his maſter had tutored for that purpoſe, no ſooner extricated himſelf from the opprobrious ſituation he had incurred, than breathing vengeance againſt the author of the affront, he came to Peregrine's apartment, and demanded ſatisfaction upon the ramparts next morning before ſun-riſe. Our hero aſſured him, he would not fail to pay his reſpects to him at the time and place appointed; and foreſeeing that he might be prevented from keeping this engagement by the officious care of his governor, who ſaw the mouſquetaire come in, he told Mr. Jolter, that the Frenchman had viſited him in conſequence of an order he had received from his ſuperiors, to make an apology for his rude behaviour to him in the playhouſe, and that they had parted very good friends. This aſſurance, together with Pickle's tranquil and unconcerned behaviour thro' the day, quieted the terrors which had begun to take poſſeſſion of his tutor's imagination; ſo that the youth had an opportunity of giving him the ſlip at night, when he betook himſelf to the lodgings of a friend, whom he engaged as his ſecond, and with whom he immediately took the field, in order to avoid the ſearch which Jolter, upon miſſing him, might ſet on foot.

This was a neceſſary precaution; for as he did not appear at ſupper, and Pipes, who uſually attended him in his excurſions, could give no account of his motions, the governor was dreadfully alarmed at his abſence, and ordered his man to run in queſt of his maſter to all the places which he uſed to frequent, while he himſelf went

to

to the commiſſaire, and communicating his ſuſpicions, was accommodated with a party of the horſe-guards, who patroled round all the *environs* of the city with a view of preventing the rencounter. Pipes might have directed them to the lady, by whoſe information they could have learnt the name and lodgings of the mouſquetaire, and if he had been apprehended, the duel would not have happened; but he did not chooſe to run the riſk of diſobliging his maſter, by intermeddling in the affair, and was moreover very deſirous that the Frenchman ſhould be humbled; for he never doubted that Peregrine was more than a match for any two men in France. In this confidence, therefore, he ſought his maſter with great diligence, not with a view of diſappointing his intention, but in order to attend him to the battle, that he might ſtand by him, and ſee juſtice done.

While this inquiry was carried on, our hero and his companion concealed themſelves among ſome weeds that grew on the edge of the parapet, a few yards from the ſpot where he had agreed to meet the mouſquetaire; and ſcarce had the morning rendered objects diſtinguiſhable, when they perceived their men advancing boldly to the place. Peregrine ſeeing them approach, ſprung forward to the ground, that he might have the glory of anticipating his antagoniſt; and ſwords being drawn, all four were engaged in a twinkling. Pickle's eagerneſs had well nigh coſt him his life; for, without minding his footing, he flew directly to his oppoſite, and ſtumbling over a ſtone, was wounded on one ſide of his head before he could recover his attitude. Far from being diſpirited at this check, it ſerved only to animate him

him the more; being endowed with uncommon agility, he retrieved his poſture in a moment, and having parried a ſecond thruſt, returned the longe with ſuch incredible ſpeed, that the ſoldier had not time to reſume his guard, but was immediately run through the bend of his right arm; and the ſword dropping out of his hand, our hero's victory was compleat.

Having diſpatched his own buſineſs, and received the acknowledgment of his adverſary, who with a look of infinite mortification obſerved, that his was the fortune of the day, he ran to part the ſeconds, juſt as the weapon was twiſted out of his companion's hand: upon which he took his place; and in all likelihood, an obſtinate diſpute would have enſued, had they not been interrupted by the guard, at ſight of whom the two Frenchmen ſcampered off. Our young gentleman and his friend allowed themſelves to be taken priſoners by the detachment which had been ſent out for that purpoſe, and were carried before the magiſtrate, who having ſharply reprimanded them for preſuming to act in contempt of the laws, ſet them at liberty, in conſideration of their being ſtrangers, cautioning them at the ſame time to beware of ſuch exploits for the future.

When Peregrine returned to his own lodgings, Pipes ſeeing the blood trickling down upon his maſter's neckcloth and ſolitaire, gave evident tokens of ſurpriſe and concern, not for the conſequences of the wound, which he did not ſuppoſe dangerous, but for the glory of Old England, which he was afraid had ſuffered in the engagement; for, he could not help ſaying, with an air of chagrin, as he followed the youth into his chamber, "I do ſuppoſe as how you gave that lubberly Frenchman as good as he brought."

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

Mr. Jolter *threatens to leave him on account of his miſconduct, which he promiſes to rectify; but his reſolution is defeated by the impetuoſity of his paſſions. He meets accidentally with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *who elopes with him from her huſband, but is reſtored by the interpoſition of the* Britiſh *embaſſador.*

THOUGH Mr. Jolter was extremely well pleaſed at the ſafety of his pupil, he could not forgive him for the terror and anxiety he had undergone on his account; and roundly told him, that notwithſtanding the inclination and attachment he had to his perſon, he would immediately depart for England, if ever he ſhould hear of his being involved in ſuch another adventure; for it could not be expected that he would ſacrifice his own quiet, to an unrequited regard for one who ſeemed determined to keep him in continual uneaſineſs and apprehenſion.

To this declaration Pickle made anſwer, that Mr. Jolter, by this time, ought to be convinced of the attention he had always paid to his eaſe and ſatisfaction; ſince he well knew that he had ever looked upon him in the light of a friend rather than as a counſellor or tutor, and deſired his company in France, with a view of promoting his intereſt, not for any emolument he could expect from his inſtruction. This being the caſe, he was at liberty to conſult his own inclinations with regard to going or ſtaying; though he could not help owning himſelf obliged by the concern he expreſſed for his ſafety, and would endeavour,

for his own ſake, to avoid giving him any cauſe of diſturbance in time to come.

No man was more capable of moralizing upon Peregrine's miſconduct than himſelf; his reflections were extremely juſt and ſagacious, and attended with no other diſadvantage, but that of occurring too late. He projected a thouſand ſalutary ſchemes of deportment, but, like other projectors, he never had intereſt enough with the miniſtry of his paſſions to bring any one of them to bear. He had in the heyday of his gallantry, received a letter from his friend Gauntlet, with a kind poſtſcript from his charming Emilia; but it arrived at a very unſeaſonable juncture, when his imagination was ingroſſed by conqueſts that more agreeably flattered his ambition; ſo that he could not find leiſure and inclination, from that day, to honour the correſpondence which he himſelf had ſolicited. His vanity had, by this time, diſapproved of the engagement he had contracted in the rawneſs and inexperience of youth; ſuggeſting, that he was born to make ſuch an important figure in life, as ought to raiſe his ideas above the conſideration of any ſuch middling connections, and fix his attention upon objects of the moſt ſublime attraction. Theſe dictates of ridiculous pride had almoſt effaced the remembrance of his amiable miſtreſs, or at leaſt ſo far warped his morals and integrity, that he actually began to conceive hopes of her altogether unworthy of his own character and her deſerts.

Mean while, being deſtitute of a toy for the dalliance of his idle hours, he employed ſeveral ſpies, and almoſt every day made a tour of the public places in perſon, with a view of pro-

curing intelligence of Mr. Hornbeck, with whose wife he longed to have another interview. In this course of expectation had he exercised himself a whole fortnight, when chancing to be at the hospital of the invalids with a gentleman lately arrived from England, he no sooner entered the church than he perceived this lady, attended by her spouse, who at sight of our hero changed colour and looked another way, in order to discourage any communication between them. But the young man, who was not so easily repulsed, advanced with great assurance to his fellow-traveller, and taking him by the hand, expressed his satisfaction at this unexpected meeting; kindly upbraiding him for his precipitate retreat from Chantilly. Before Hornbeck could make any reply, he went up to his wife, whom he complimented in the same manner, assuring her with some significant glances, he was extremely mortified, that she had put it out of his power to pay his respects to her on his first arrival at Paris; and then turning to her husband, who thought proper to keep close to him in this conference, begged to know where he could have the honour of waiting upon him; observing at the same time, that he himself lived *a l'academie de Palfrenier*.

Mr. Hornbeck, without making any apology for his elopement on the road, thanked Mr. Pickle for his complaisance in a very cool and disobliging manner; saying, that as he intended to shift his lodgings in a day or two, he could not expect the pleasure of seeing him, until he should be settled, when he would call at the academy, and conduct him to his new habitation.

Pickle,

Pickle, who was not unacquainted with the ſentiments of this jealous gentleman, did not put much confidence in his promiſe, and therefore made divers efforts to enjoy a little private converſation with his wife; but he was baffled in all his attempts by the indefatigable vigilance of her keeper, and reaped no other immediate pleaſure from this accidental meeting, than that of a kind ſqueeze while he handed her into the coach. However, as he had been witneſs to ſome inſtances of her invention, and was no ſtranger to the favourable diſpoſition of her heart, he entertained ſome faint hopes of profiting by her underſtanding, and was not deceived in his expectation; for the very next forenoon, a Savoyard called at the academy, and put the following billet in his hand:

Coind Sur,

HEaving the playſure of meating with you at the ofspital of anvilheads, I take this lubbertea of latin you know, that I lotch at the *hottail de May cong dangle rouy Doghouſeten*, with two poſtis at the gait, naytheir of um very hole, ware I ſhall be at the windore, if in kais you will be ſo good as to paſs that way at ſicks a cloak in the heavening, when Mr. Hornbeck goes to the *Calſhay de Contea*. Prey for the loaf of Geeſus keep this from the nolegs of my huſsban, ells he will make me leed a hell upon urth. Being all from, deer Sur,

Your moſt umbell ſarvan wile

DERORAH HORNBECK.

Our young gentleman was raviſhed at the receipt of this elegant epiſtle, which was directed, *A Monſr Monſr Pickhell, a la Gaddamme de Paul Freny*, and did not fail to obey the ſummons at the hour of aſſignation; when the lady, true to her appointment, beckoned him up ſtairs, and he had the good fortune to be admitted unſeen.

After the firſt tranſports of their mutual joy at meeting, ſhe told him, that her huſband had been very ſurly and croſs ever ſince the adventure at Chantilly, which he had not yet digeſted; that he had laid ſevere injunctions upon her to avoid all commerce with Pickle, and even threatened to ſhut her up in a convent for life, if ever ſhe ſhould diſcover the leaſt inclination to renew that acquaintance; that ſhe had been cooped up in her chamber ſince her arrival at Paris, without being permitted to ſee the place, or indeed any company, except that of her landlady, whoſe language ſhe did not underſtand; ſo that her ſpirit being broke, and her health impaired, he was prevailed upon ſome days ago to indulge her in a few airings, during which ſhe had ſeen the gardens of the Luxembourg, the Thuilleries and Palais Royal, though at thoſe times when there was no company in the walks; and that it was in one of thoſe excurſions ſhe had the happineſs of meeting with him. Finally, ſhe gave him to underſtand, that rather than continue longer in ſuch confinement with the man whom ſhe could not love, ſhe would inſtantly give him the ſlip, and put herſelf under the protection of her lover.

Raſh and unthinking as this declaration might be, the young gentleman was ſo much of a gallant, that he would not baulk the lady's inclinations, and too infatuated by his paſſion to foreſee

the conſequences of ſuch a dangerous ſtep; he therefore, without heſitation, embraced the propoſal, and the coaſt being clear, they ſallied into the ſtreet, where Peregrine calling a Fiacre, ordered the coachman to drive them to a tavern: but knowing it would not be in his power to conceal her from the ſearch of the lieutenant de police, if ſhe ſhould remain within the walls of Paris; he hired a Remiſe, and carried her that ſame evening to Villejuif, about four leagues from town, where he ſtayed with her all night; and having boarded her on a genteel penſion, and ſettled the œconomy of his future viſits, returned next day to his own lodgings.

While he thus enjoyed his ſucceſs, her huſband endured the tortures of the damned. When he returned from the coffee-houſe, and underſtood that his wife had eloped, without being perceived by any perſon in the family, he began to rave and foam with rage and jealouſy, and in the fury of diſtraction, accuſed the landlady of being an accomplice in her eſcape, threatening to complain of her to the commiſſaire. The woman could not conceive how Mrs. Hornbeck, who ſhe knew was an utter ſtranger to the French language, and kept no ſort of company, could elude the caution of her huſband, and find any refuge in a place where ſhe had no acquaintance, and began to ſuſpect the lodger's emotion was no other than an affected paſſion to conceal his own practices upon his wife, who had perhaps fallen a ſacrifice to his jealous diſpoſition. She therefore ſpared him the trouble of putting his menaces in execution, by going to the magiſtrate without any further deliberation, and giving an account of what ſhe knew concerning this myſte-

rious affair, with certain inſinuations againſt Hornbeck's character, which ſhe repreſented as peeviſh and capricious to the laſt degree.

While ſhe thus anticipated the purpoſe of the plaintiff, her information was interrupted by the arrival of the party himſelf, who exhibited his complaint with ſuch evident marks of perturbation, anger and impatience, that the commiſſaire could eaſily perceive that he had no ſhare in the diſappearance of his wife; and directed him to the lieutenant de police, whoſe province it is to take cognizance of ſuch occurrences. This gentleman, who preſides over the city of Paris, having heard the particulars of Hornbeck's misfortune, aſked if he ſuſpected any individual perſon as the ſeducer of his yoke-fellow; and when he mentioned Peregrine as the object of his ſuſpicion, granted a warrant and a detachment of ſoldiers, to ſearch for and retrieve the fugitive.

The huſband conducted them immediately to the academy, where our hero lodged, and having rummaged the whole place, to the aſtoniſhment of Mr. Jolter, without finding either his wife or the ſuppoſed raviſher, accompanied them to all the public houſes in the Fauxbourg; which having examined alſo without ſucceſs, he returned to the magiſtrate in a ſtate of deſpair, and obtained a promiſe of his making ſuch an effectual inquiry, that in three days he ſhould have an account of her, provided ſhe was alive, and within the walls of Paris.

Our adventurer, who had foreſeen all this diſturbance, was not at all ſurpriſed when his governor told him what had happened; and conjured him to reſtore the woman to the right owner,

owner, with many pathetic remonſtrances touching the heinous ſin of adultery, the diſtraction of the unfortunate huſband, and the danger of incurring the reſentment of an arbitrary government, which, upon application being made, would not fail of eſpouſing the cauſe of the injured. He denied, with great effrontery, that he had the leaſt concern in the matter, pretended to reſent the deportment of Hornbeck, whom he threatened to chaſtiſe for his ſcandalous ſuſpicion, and expreſſed his diſpleaſure at the credulity of Jolter, who ſeemed to doubt the veracity of his aſſeveration.

Notwithſtanding this confident behaviour, Jolter could not help entertaining doubts of his ſincerity; and viſiting the diſconſolate ſwain, begged he would, for the honour of his country, as well as for the ſake of his own reputation, diſcontinue his addreſſes to the lieutenant de police, and apply to the Britiſh Embaſſador, who, by dint of friendly admonitions, would certainly prevail upon Mr. Pickle to do him all the juſtice in his power, if he was really the author of the injury he had ſuſtained. The governor urged this advice with the appearance of ſo much ſympathy and concern, promiſing to co-operate with all his influence in his behalf, that Hornbeck embraced the propoſal, communicated his purpoſe to the magiſtrate, who commended the reſolution as the moſt decent and deſirable expedient he could uſe, and then waited upon his excellency, who readily eſpouſed his cauſe, and ſending for the young gentleman that ſame evening, read him ſuch a lecture in private, as extorted a confeſſion of the whole affair. Not that he aſſailed him with ſour and ſupercilious maxims, or ſevere rebuke, be-

cauſe he had penetration enough to diſcern that Peregrine's diſpoſition was impregnable to all ſuch attacks; but he firſt of all rallied him upon his intriguing genius, then in an humourous manner, deſcribed the diſtraction of the poor cuckold, who he owned was juſtly puniſhed for the abſurdity of his conduct; and laſtly, upon the ſuppoſition, that it would be no great effort in Pickle to part with ſuch a conqueſt, eſpecially after it had been for ſome time poſſeſſed, repreſented the neceſſity and expediency of reſtoring her, not only out of regard to his own character, and that of his nation, but alſo with a view to his eaſe, which would in a little time be very much invaded by ſuch an incumbrance, that in all probability would involve him in a thouſand difficulties and diſguſts. Beſides, he aſſured him, that he was already, by order of the lieutenant de police, ſurrounded with ſpies, who would watch all his motions, and immediately diſcover the retreat in which he had depoſited his prize. Theſe arguments, and the frank familiar manner in which they were delivered, but above all, the laſt conſideration, induced the young gentleman to diſcloſe the whole of his proceedings to the embaſſador, and promiſe to be governed by his direction, provided the lady ſhould not ſuffer for the ſtep ſhe had taken, but be received by her huſband with due reverence and reſpect. Theſe ſtipulations being agreed to, he undertook to produce her in eight and forty hours; and taking coach immediately drove to the place of her reſidence, where he ſpent a whole day and a night in convincing her of the impoſſibility of their enjoying each other in that manner. Then returning to Paris he delivered her into the hands of

of the embaſſador, who having aſſured her, that ſhe might depend upon his friendſhip and protection, in caſe ſhe ſhould find herſelf aggrieved by the jealous temper of Mr. Hornbeck, reſtored her to her legitimate lord, whom he counſelled to exempt her from that reſtraint, which in all probability had been the cauſe of her elopement, and endeavour to conciliate her affection by tender and reſpectful uſage.

The huſband behaved with great humility and compliance, proteſting that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to contrive parties for her pleaſure and ſatisfaction. But no ſooner did he regain poſſeſſion of his ſtray-ſheep, than he locked her up more cloſely than ever; and after having revolved various ſchemes for her reformation, determined to board her in a convent, under the inſpection of a prudent abbeſs, who ſhould ſuperintend her morals, and recal her to the paths of virtue, which ſhe had forſaken. With this view he conſulted an Engliſh prieſt of his acquaintance, who adviſed him to ſettle her in a monaſtery at Liſle, that ſhe might be as far as poſſible from the machinations of her lover; and gave him a letter of recommendation to the ſuperior of a certain convent in that place, for which Mr. Hornbeck ſet out in a few days with his troubleſome charge.

CHAP. XLII.

Peregrine *reſolves to return to* England, *is diverted with the odd characters of two of his countrymen, with whom he contracts an acquaintance in the apartments of the Palais Royal.*

IN the mean time, our hero received a letter from his aunt, importing that the commodore was in a very declining way, and longed much to ſee him at the gariſon; and at the ſame time he heard from his ſiſter, who gave him to underſtand that the young gentleman who had for ſome time made his addreſſes to her, was become very preſſing in his ſolicitations; ſo that ſhe wanted to know in what manner ſhe ſhould anſwer his repeated intreaties. Theſe two conſiderations determined the young gentleman to return to his native country, a reſolution that was far from being diſagreeable to Jolter, who knew that the incumbent on a living which was in the gift of Trunnion, was extremely old, and that it would be his intereſt to be upon the ſpot at the ſaid incumbent's deceaſe.

Peregrine, who had reſided about fifteen months in France, thought he was now ſufficiently qualified for eclipſing moſt of his cotemporaries in England, and therefore prepared for his departure with infinite alacrity, being moreover inflamed with the moſt ardent deſire of reviſiting his friends, and renewing his connexions, particularly with Emilia, whoſe heart he, by this time, thought he was able to reduce on his own terms.

As he propoſed to make the tour of Flanders and Holland in his return to England, he reſolved

to

to ſtay in Paris a week or two after his affairs were ſettled, in hope of finding ſome agreeable companion diſpoſed for the ſame journey, and in order to refreſh his memory, made a ſecond circuit round all the places in that capital, where any curious production of art is to be ſeen. In the courſe of this ſecond examination he chanced to enter the Palais Royal, juſt as two gentlemen alighted from a Fiacre at the gate, and all three being admitted at the ſame time, he ſoon perceived that the ſtrangers were of his own country. One of them was a young man, in whoſe air and countenance appeared all the uncouth gravity and ſupercilious ſelf-conceit of a phyſician piping hot from his ſtudies; while the other, to whom his companion ſpoke by the appellation of Mr. Pallet, diſplayed at firſt ſight a ſtrange compoſition of levity and aſſurance. Indeed their characters, dreſs and addreſs were ſtrongly contraſted; the doctor wore a ſuit of black, and a huge tye-wig, neither ſuitable to his own age, nor the faſhion of the country where he then lived; whereas the other, though ſeemingly turned of fifty, ſtrutted in a gay ſummer dreſs of the Pariſian cut, with a bag to his own gray hair, and a red feather in his hat, which he carried under his arm. As theſe figures ſeemed to promiſe ſomething entertaining, Pickle entered into converſation with them immediately, and ſoon diſcovered that the old gentleman was a painter from London, who had ſtole a fortnight from his occupation, in order to viſit the remarkable paintings of France and Flanders; and that the doctor had taken the opportunity of accompanying him in his tour. Being extremely talkative, he not only communicated theſe particulars to our hero in a very few

minutes after their meeting, but alſo took occaſion to whiſper in his ear, that his fellow traveller was a man of vaſt learning, and, beyond all doubt, the greateſt poet of the age. As for himſelf, he was under no neceſſity of making his own elogium; for he ſoon gave ſuch ſpecimens of his taſte and talents, as left Pickle no room to doubt of his capacity.

While they ſtood conſidering the pictures in one of the firſt apartments, which are by no means the moſt maſterly compoſitions, the Swiſs, who ſets up for a connoiſſeur, looking at a certain piece, pronounced the word *magnifique!* with a note of admiration; upon which Mr. Pallet, who was not at all a critic in the french language replied with great vivacity, "*Manufac*, you mean, and a very indifferent piece of manufacture it is; pray, gentlemen, take notice, there is no keeping in thoſe heads upon the back ground, nor no relief in the principal figure: then you'll obſerve the ſhadings are harſh to the laſt degree;—and come a little cloſer this way—don't you perceive that the fore-ſhortening of that arm is monſtrous—agad, ſir! there is an abſolute fracture in the limb—doctor, you underſtand anatomy, don't you think that muſcle evidently miſplaced? Heark ye, Mr. what d'ye call um, (turning to the attendant) what is the name of the dauber who painted that miſerable performance!" The Swiſs imagining that he was all this time expreſſing his ſatisfaction, ſanctioned his ſuppoſed commendation, by exclaiming *ſans prix*. "Right, cried Pallet, I could not recollect his name, though his manner is quite familiar to me. We have a few pieces in England, done by that ſame Sangpree; but there they are in no eſtimation;

we

we have more taſte among us, than to reliſh the productions of ſuch a miſerable gout. A'n't he an ignorant coxcomb, doctor?" The phyſician, aſhamed of his companion's blunder, thought it was neceſſary for the honour of his own character, to take notice of it before the ſtranger, and therefore anſwered his queſtion, by repeating this line from Horace,

Mutato nomine, de te fabula narratur.

The painter, who was rather more ignorant of Latin than of French, taking it for granted that this quotation of his friend, conveyed an aſſent to his opinion, "Very true, ſaid he, *Potatoe domine date*, This piece is not worth a ſingle potatoe." Peregrine was aſtoniſhed at this ſurpriſing perverſion of the words and meaning of a Latin line, which, at firſt, he could not help thinking was a premeditated joke; but upon ſecond thoughts, he ſaw no reaſon to doubt that it was the extemporaneous effect of ſheer pertneſs and ignorance, at which he broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter. Pallet, believing that the gentleman's mirth was occaſioned by his arch animadverſion upon the work of Sangpree, underwent the ſame emotion in a much louder ſtrain, and endeavoured to heighten the jeſt, by more obſervations of the ſame nature; while the doctor, confounded at his impudence and want of knowledge, reprimanded him in theſe words of Homer,

Siga me tis allos Achaion touton akouſe muthon.

This rebuke, the reader will eaſily perceive, was not calculated for the meridian of his friend's intellects,

tellects, but uttered with a view of raiſing his own character in the opinion of Mr. Pickle, who retorted this parade of learning in three verſes from the ſame author, being part of the ſpeech of Polydamas to Hector, importing that it is impoſſible for one man to excel in every thing. The ſelf-ſufficient phyſician, who did not expect ſuch a repartee from a youth of Peregrine's appearance, looked upon his reply as a fair challenge, and inſtantly rehearſed forty or fifty lines of the Iliad in a breath. Obſerving that the ſtranger made no effort to match this effuſion, he interpreted his ſilence into ſubmiſſion; then, in order to aſcertain his victory, inſulted him with divers fragments of authors, whom his ſuppoſed competitor did not even know by name; while Mr. Pallet ſtared with admiration at the profound ſcholarſhip of his companion. Our young gentleman, far from repining at this ſuperiority, laughed within himſelf at the ridiculous ambition of the pedantic doctor. He rated him in his own mind as a meer index-hunter, who held the eel of ſcience by the tail, and foreſaw an infinite fund of diverſion in his ſolemnity and pride, if properly extracted by means of his fellow-traveller's vanity and aſſurance. Prompted by theſe conſiderations, he reſolved to cultivate their acquaintance, and, if poſſible, amuſe himſelf at their expence in his journey thro' Flanders, underſtanding that they were determined upon the ſame route. In this view he treated them with extraordinary attention, and ſeemed to pay particular deference to the remarks of the painter, who with great intrepidity pronounced judgment upon very picture in the palace, or in other words, expoſed his own

nakedneſs, in every ſentence that proceeded from his mouth.

When they came to conſider the murder of the innocents by Le Brun, the Swiſs obſerved that it was *un beau morceau*, and Mr. Pallet replied, "Yes, yes, one may ſee with half an eye, that it can be the production of no other; for Bomorſo's ſtile both in colouring and drapery, is altogether peculiar; then his deſign is tame, and his expreſſion antic and unnatural. Doctor, you have ſeen my Judgment of Solomon, I think I may without preſumption—but, I don't chooſe to make compariſons, I leave that odious taſk to other people, and let my works ſpeak for themſelves. France, to be ſure, is rich in the arts, but what is the reaſon? the king encourages men of genius with honour and rewards: whereas, in England, we are obliged to ſtand upon our own feet, and combat the envy and malice of our brethren; agad! I have a good mind to come and ſettle here in Paris; I ſhould like to have an apartment in the Louvre, with a ſnug penſion of ſo many thouſand Livres." In this manner did Pallet proceed with an eternal rotation of tongue, floundering from one miſtake to another, until it was the turn of Pouſſin's ſeven ſacraments to be examined. Here again the Swiſs, out of the abundance of his zeal, expreſſed his admiration, by ſaying theſe pieces were *impayable*; when the painter turning to him with an air of exultation, "Pardon me, friend, there you happen to be miſtaken, theſe are none of *Impayable*'s; but done by Nicholas Pouſſeen. I have ſeen prints of them in England, ſo that none of your tricks upon travellers, Mr. Swiſs or Swaſh, or what's your name." He was very much elated by this imaginary triumph

triumph of his underſtanding, which animated him to perſevere in his curious obſervations upon all the other pieces of that celebrated collection; but perceiving that the doctor manifeſted no ſigns of pleaſure and ſatisfaction, but rather beheld them with a ſilent air of diſdain, he could not digeſt his indifference, and aſked with a waggiſh ſneer, if ever he had ſeen ſuch a number of maſter-pieces before? The phyſician eyeing him with a look of compaſſion mingled with contempt, obſerved that there was nothing there which deſerved the attention of any perſon acquainted with the ideas of the ancients; and that the author of the fineſt piece now in being, was unworthy to clean the bruſhes of one of thoſe great maſters, who are celebrated by the Greek and Roman writers. "O lud! O lud! (exclaimed the painter, with a loud laugh) you have fairly brought yourſelf into a dilemma at laſt, dear doctor; for it is well known that your ancient Greek and Roman artiſts knew nothing at all of the matter, in compariſon with our modern maſters; for this good reaſon, becauſe they had but three or four colours, and knew not how to paint with oil: beſides, which of all your old fuſty Grecians would you put upon a footing with the divine Raphael, the moſt excellent Michael Angelo Bona Roti, the graceful Guido, the bewitching Titian, and above all others, the ſublime Rubens, the"——He would have proceeded with a long catalogue of names which he had got by heart for the purpoſe, without retaining the leaſt idea of their ſeveral qualifications, had not he been interrupted by his friend, whoſe indignation being kindled by the irreverence with which he mentioned the Greeks; he called him blaſphemer, Goth,

Goth, Bœotian, and in his turn, aſked with great vehemence, which of thoſe puny moderns could match with Panænus of Athens, and his brother Phidias, Polycletus of Sicyon, Polygnotus the Thraſian, Parrhaſius of Epheſus, ſirnamed Abrodiaitos, or *the Beau*, and Apelles, the prince of painters? He challenged him to ſhew any portrait of theſe days that could vye with the Helen of Zeuxis the Heraclean, or any compoſition equal to the ſacrifice of Iphigenia, by Timanthes the Sicyonian; not to mention the twelve gods of Aſclepiadorus the Athenian, for which Mnaſon, tyrant of Elatea, gave him about three hundred pounds a-piece, or Homer's hell by Nicias, who refuſed ſixty talents, amounting to upwards of eleven thouſand pounds, and generouſly made a preſent of it to his own country. He deſired him to produce a collection equal to that in the Temple of Delphos, mentioned in the *Ion* of Euripides; where Hercules and his companion Iolaus are repreſented in the act of killing the Lernæan hydra, with golden ſickles, *kruſeais harpais*, where Bellerophon appears on his winged ſteed, vanquiſhing the fire-breathing chimera, *tan puripneouſan*; and the war of the giants is deſcribed. Here Jupiter ſtands wielding the red hot thunderbolts, *Keraunon amphipuron*; there Pallas dreadful to the view, *Gorgopon*, brandiſheth her ſpear againſt the huge Enceladus; and Bacchus with ſlender ivy rods, defeats and ſlays the *gas teknon*, or mighty ſon of earth. The painter was aſtoniſhed and confounded at this rhapſody of names and inſtances, which was uttered with ſurpriſing eagerneſs and rapidity; ſuſpecting at firſt that the whole was the creation of his own brain; but when Pickle, with a view of flattering the doctor's ſelf-

ſelf-conceit, eſpouſed his ſide of the queſtion, and confirmed the truth of every thing he advanced, Mr. Pallet changed his opinion, and in emphatic ſilence adored the immenſity of his friend's underſtanding. In ſhort, Peregrine eaſily perceived that they were falſe enthuſiaſts, without the ſmalleſt pretenſions to taſte and ſenſibility; and pretended to be in raptures with they knew not what; the one thinking it was incumbent upon him to expreſs tranſports on ſeeing the works of thoſe who had been moſt eminent in his profeſſion, whether they did or did not really raiſe his admiration; and the other as a ſcholar deeming it his duty to magnify the ancients above all competition, with an affected fervour, which the knowledge of their excellencies never inſpired. Indeed our young gentleman ſo ſucceſsfully accommodated himſelf to the diſpoſitions of each, that long before their review was finiſhed, he was become a particular favourite with both.

From the Palais Royal he accompanied them to the cloiſters of the Carthuſians, where they conſidered the hiſtory of St. Bruno, by Le Sueur, whoſe name being utterly unknown to the painter, he gave judgment againſt the whole compoſition, as pitiful and paultry; though in the opinion of all good judges it is a moſt maſterly performance.

Having ſatisfied their curioſity in this place, Peregrine aſked them to favour him with their company at dinner; but whether out of caution againſt the inſinuations of one whoſe character they did not know, or by reaſon of a prior engagement, they declined his invitation on pretence of having an appointment at a certain ordinary, tho' they expreſſed a deſire of being farther acquainted with him; and Mr. Pallet took the free-

dom

dom of aſking his name, which he not only declared, but promiſed, as they were ſtrangers in Paris, to wait upon them next day in the forenoon, in order to conduct them to the hotel de Tholouſe, and the houſes of ſeveral other noblemen, remarkable for painting or curious furniture. They thankfully embraced his propoſal, and that ſame day made enquiry among the Engliſh gentlemen, about the character of our hero, which they found ſo much to their ſatisfaction, that upon their ſecond meeting, they courted his good graces without reſerve; and as they had heard of his intended departure, begged earneſtly to have the honour of accompanying him through the Low Countries. He aſſured them that nothing could be more agreeable to him, than the proſpect of having ſuch fellow-travellers; and they immediately appointed a day for ſetting out on that tour.

CHAP. XLIII.

He introduces his new friends to Mr. Jolter, *with whom the doctor enters into a diſpute upon government, which had well nigh terminated in open war.*

MEAN while, he not only made them acquainted with every thing worth ſeeing in town, but attended them in their excurſions to all the king's houſes within a day's journey of Paris; and in the courſe of theſe parties, treated them with an elegant dinner at his own apartments, where a diſpute aroſe between the doctor and Mr. Jolter, which had well nigh terminated in an irreconcileable animoſity. Theſe gentlemen, with

with an equal ſhare of pride, pedantry and ſaturnine diſpoſition, were by the accidents of education and company, diametrically oppoſite in political maxims; the one, as we have already obſerved, being a bigotted high churchman, and the other a rank republican. It was an article of the governor's creed, that the people could not be happy, nor the earth yield its fruits in abundance, under a reſtricted clergy and limited government: whereas in the doctor's opinion, it was an eternal truth, that no conſtitution was ſo perfect as the democracy, and that no country could flouriſh, but under the adminiſtration of the mob.

Theſe conſiderations being premiſed, no wonder that they happened to diſagree in the freedom of an unreſerved converſation, eſpecially as their entertainer took all opportunities of encouraging and enflaming the contention. The firſt ſource of their difference was an unlucky remark of the painter, who obſerved that the partridge of which he was then eating, had the fineſt reliſh of any he had ever taſted. His friend owned that the birds were the beſt of the kind he had ſeen in France; but affirmed that they were neither ſo plump nor delicious as thoſe that were caught in England. The governor, conſidering this obſervation as the effect of prejudice and inexperience, ſaid, with a ſarcaſtical ſmile, "I believe, ſir, you are very well diſpoſed to find every thing here inferior to the productions of your own country." "True, ſir, (anſwered the phyſician with a certain ſolemnity of aſpect) and not without good reaſon I hope." "And pray, (reſumed the tutor) why may not the partridges of France be as good as thoſe of England?" "For a very plain reaſon, replied the other, becauſe they are not

not ſo well fed. The iron hand of oppreſſion is extended to all animals within the French dominions, even to the beaſts of the field and the fowls of the air. *Kuneſſin oionoiſi te paſi.*" "Egad! cried the painter, that is a truth not to be controverted: for my own part, I am none of your tit-bits, one would think, but yet there's a freſhneſs in the Engliſh complection, a *ginſeckeye*, I think you call it, ſo inviting to a hungry Frenchman, that I have caught ſeveral in the very act of viewing me with an eye of extreme appetite, as I paſſed; and as for their curs, or rather their wolves, whenever I ſet eyes on one of 'em, Aha! your humble ſervant Mr. ſon of a bitch, I am upon my guard in an inſtant. The doctor can teſtify that their very horſes, or more properly their live carrion that drew our chaiſe, uſed to reach back their long necks and ſmell at us, as a couple of delicious morſels." This ſally of Mr. Pallet, which was received with a general laugh of approbation, would, in all probability, have ſtifled the diſpute in embrio, had not Mr. Jolter with a ſelf-applauding ſimper, ironically complimented the ſtrangers on their talking like true Engliſhmen. The doctor, affronted at the inſinuation, told him with ſome warmth, that he was miſtaken in his conjecture, his affections and ideas being confined to no particular country; for he conſidered himſelf as a citizen of the world. He owned himſelf more attached to England than to any other kingdom, but this preference was the effect of reflection, and not of prejudice; becauſe the Britiſh conſtitution approached nearer than any other to that perfection of government, the democracy of Athens, which he hoped one day to ſee revived: he mentioned the death of

Charles

Charles the firſt, and the expulſion of his ſon, with raptures of applauſe, inveighed with great acrimony againſt the kingly name; and in order to ſtrengthen his opinion, repeated forty or fifty lines from one of the Philippicks of Demoſthenes. Jolter hearing him ſpeak ſo diſreſpectfully of the higher powers, glowed with indignation. He ſaid his doctrines were deteſtible and deſtructive of all right, order, and ſociety; that monarchy was of divine inſtitution, therefore indefeaſible by any human power; and of conſequence thoſe events in the Engliſh hiſtory which he had ſo liberally commended, were no other than flagrant inſtances of ſacrilege, perfidy, and ſedition; that the democracy of Athens was a moſt abſurd conſtitution, productive of anarchy and miſchief, which muſt always happen when the government of a nation depends upon the caprice of the ignorant hair-brained vulgar: that it was in the power of the moſt profligate member of the commonwealth, provided he was endowed with eloquence, to ruin the moſt deſerving, by a deſperate exertion of his talents upon the populace, who had been often perſuaded to act in the moſt ungrateful and imprudent manner, againſt the greateſt patriots that their country had produced: and finally, he averred, that the liberal arts and ſciences had never flouriſhed ſo much in a republick, as under the encouragement and protection of abſolute power; witneſs the Auguſtan age, and the reign of Lewis the fourteenth: nor was it to be ſuppoſed that genius and merit could ever be ſo amply recompenſed by the individuals, or diſtracted councils of a commonwealth, as by the generoſity and magnificence of one, who had the whole treaſures at his own command.

Pere-

Peregrine, who was pleaſed to find the conteſt grow warm, obſerved that there ſeemed to be a good deal of truth in what Mr. Jolter advanced; and the painter, whoſe opinion began to waver, looked with a face of expectation at his friend, who modelling his features into an expreſſion of exulting diſdain, aſked of his antagoniſt, if he did not think that very power of rewarding merit, enabled an abſolute prince to indulge himſelf in the moſt arbitrary licence over the lives and fortunes of his people? Before the governor had time to anſwer this queſtion, Pallet broke forth into an exclamation of "By the lord! that is certainly fact, egad! that was a home thruſt, doctor." When Mr. Jolter chaſtiſing this ſhallow intruder with a contemptuous look, affirmed that though ſupreme power furniſhed a good prince with the means of exerting his virtues, it would not ſupport a tyrant in the exerciſe of cruelty and oppreſſion; becauſe in all nations, the genius of the people muſt be conſulted by their governors, and the burthen proportioned to the ſhoulders on which it is laid. "Elſe, what follows?" ſaid the phyſician. "The conſequence is plain, replied the governor, inſurrection, revolt, and his own deſtruction: for it is not to be ſuppoſed that the ſubjects of any nation would be ſo abject and puſillanimous, as to neglect the means which heaven hath put in their power for their own preſervation." "Gadzooks! you're in the right, ſir, cried Pallet, that I grant you muſt be confeſſed; doctor, I'm afraid we have got into the wrong box." This ſon of Pæan, however, far from being of his friend's opinion, obſerved with an air of triumph, that he would not only demonſtrate the ſophiſtry of the gentleman's laſt allegation,

by

by argument and facts, but even confute him with his own words. Jolter's eyes kindling at this preſumptuous declaration, he told his antagoniſt, while his lip quivered with reſentment, that if his arguments were no better than his breeding, he was ſure he would make very few converts to his opinion: and the doctor, with all the inſolence of triumph, adviſed him to beware of diſputes for the future, until he ſhould have made himſelf more maſter of his ſubject.

Peregrine both wiſhed and hoped to ſee the diſputants proceed to arguments of more weight and conviction; and the painter dreading the ſame iſſue, interpoſed with the uſual exclamation of "for God's ſake, gentlemen!" when the governor roſe from table in great dudgeon, and left the room, muttering ſome ejaculation, of which the word coxcomb only could be diſtinctly heard. The phyſician being thus left maſter of the field of battle, was complimented on his victory by Peregrine, and ſo elevated by his ſucceſs, that he declaimed a full hour on the abſurdity of Jolter's propoſition, and the beauty of the democratick adminiſtration; canvaſſed the whole ſcheme of Plato's republic, with many quotations from that ideal author, touching the το καλον: from thence he made a tranſition to the moral ſenſe of Shafteſbury, and concluded his harangue with the greateſt part of that frothy writer's rhapſody, which he repeated with all the violence of enthuſiaſtic agitation; to the unſpeakable ſatisfaction of his entertainer, and the unutterable admiration of Pallet, who looked upon him as ſomething ſupernatural and divine. So intoxicated was this vain young man with the ironical praiſes of Pickle, that he forthwith ſhook off all reſerve,

and

and having profeſſed a friendſhip for our hero, whoſe taſte and learning he did not fail to extol, intimated in plain terms, that he was the only perſon in theſe latter ages, who profeſſed that ſublime genius, that portion of the divinity or Ti Theion, which immortalized the Grecian Poets; that as Pythagoras affirmed the ſpirit of Euphorbus had tranſmigrated into his body, he, the doctor, was ſtrangely poſſeſſed with the opinion that he himſelf was inſpired by the ſoul of Pindar; becauſe, making allowance for the difference of languages, in which they wrote, there was a ſurpriſing affinity between his own works and thoſe of that celebrated Theban; and as a confirmation of this truth, he immediately produced a ſample of each, which though in ſpirit and verſification, as different as the Odes of Horace and our preſent laureat, Peregrine did not ſcruple to pronounce altogether congenial; notwithſtanding the violence he by this ſentence offered to his own conſcience, and a certain alarm of his pride, that was weak enough to be diſturbed by the phyſician's ridiculous vanity and preſumption, which not contented with diſplaying his importance in the world of taſte and polite literature, manifeſted itſelf in arrogating certain material diſcoveries in the province of phyſick, which could not fail to advance him to the higheſt pinnacle of that profeſſion, conſidering the recommendation of his other talents, together with a liberal fortune which he inherited from his father.

CHAP. XLIV.

The doctor prepares an entertainment in the manner of the ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous circumstances.

IN a word, our young gentleman, by his insinuating behaviour, acquired the full confidence of the doctor, who invited him to an entertainment, which he intended to prepare in the manner of the ancients. Pickle, struck with this idea, eagerly embraced the proposal, which he honoured with many encomiums, as a plan in all respects worthy of his genius and apprehension; and the day was appointed at some distance of time, that the treater might have leisure to compose certain pickles and confections which were not to be found among the culinary preparations of these degenerate days.

With a view of rendering the physician's taste more conspicuous, and extracting from it the more diversion, Peregrine proposed that some foreigners should partake of the banquet; and the task being left to his care and discretion, he actually bespoke the company of a French marquis, an Italian count, and a German baron, whom he knew to be egregious coxcombs, and therefore more likely to enhance the joy of the entertainment.

Accordingly, the hour being arrived, he conducted them to the hotel where the physician lodged, after having regaled their expectations with an elegant meal in the genuine old Roman taste; and they were received by Mr. Pallet, who did the honours of the house, while his friend superin-

ſuperintended the cook below. By this communicative painter, the gueſts underſtood that the doctor had met with numerous difficulties in the execution of his deſign; that no fewer than five cooks had been diſmiſſed, becauſe they could not prevail upon their own conſciences to obey his directions in things that were contrary to the preſent practice of their art; and that although he had at laſt engaged a perſon, by an extraordinary premium, to comply with his orders, the fellow was ſo aſtoniſhed, mortified and incenſed at the commands he had received, that his hair ſtood on end, and he begged on his knees, to be releaſed from the agreement he had made: but finding that his employer inſiſted upon the performance of his contract, and threatened to introduce him to the commiſſaire, if he ſhould flinch from the bargain, he had, in the diſcharge of his office, wept, ſung, curſed and capered for two whole hours without intermiſſion.

While the company liſtened to this odd information, by which they were prepoſſeſſed with ſtrange notions of the dinner, their ears were invaded by a piteous voice that exclaimed in French, "For the love of God! dear Sir! for the paſſion of Jeſus Chriſt! ſpare me the mortification of the honey and oil!" Their ears ſtill vibrated with the ſound, when the doctor entring, was by Peregrine made acquainted with the ſtrangers, to whom he, in the tranſports of his wrath, could not help complaining of the want of complaiſance he had found in the Pariſian vulgar, by which his plan had been almoſt entirely ruined and ſet aſide. The French marquis, who thought the honour of his nation was concerned at this declaration, profeſſed his ſorrow for what had

happened, ſo contrary to the eſtabliſhed character of the people, and undertook to ſee the delinquents ſeverely puniſhed, provided he could be informed of their names or places of abode. The mutual compliments that paſſed on this occaſion were ſcarce finiſhed, when a ſervant coming into the room, announced dinner; and the entertainer led the way into another apartment, where they found a long table, or rather two boards joined together, and furniſhed with a variety of diſhes, the ſteams of which had ſuch evident effect upon the nerves of the company, that the marquis made frightful grimaces, under pretence of taking ſnuff; the Italian's eyes watered, the German's viſage underwent violent diſtortion of features; our hero found means to exclude the odour from his ſenſe of ſmelling, by breathing only through his mouth; and the poor painter running into another room, plugged his noſtrils with tobacco. The doctor himſelf, who was the only perſon then preſent whoſe organs were not diſcompoſed, pointing to a couple of couches placed on each ſide of the table, told his gueſts, that he was ſorry he could not procure the exact *triclinia* of the ancients, which were ſomewhat different from theſe conveniencies, and deſired they would have the goodneſs to repoſe themſelves without ceremony, each in his reſpective couchette, while he and his friend Mr. Pallet would place themſelves upright at the ends, that they might have the pleaſure of ſerving thoſe that lay along. This diſpoſition, of which the ſtrangers had no previous idea, diſconcerted and perplexed them in a moſt ridiculous manner; the marquis and baron ſtood bowing to each other, on pretence of diſputing the lower ſeat, but in reality with a view of profiting by

by the example of one another, for neither of them underſtood the manner in which they were to loll; and Peregrine, who enjoyed their confuſion, handed the count to the other ſide, where, with the moſt miſchievous politeneſs, he inſiſted upon his taking poſſeſſion of the upper place.

In this diſagreeable and ludicrous ſuſpence they continued acting a pantomime of geſticulations, until the doctor earneſtly intreated them to wave all compliment and form, leſt the dinner ſhould be ſpoiled before the ceremonial could be adjuſted. Thus conjured, Peregrine took the lower couch on the left-hand ſide, laying himſelf gently down, with his face towards the table. The marquis, in imitation of this pattern (though he would have much rather faſted three days than run the riſk of diſcompoſing his dreſs by ſuch an attitude) ſtretched himſelf upon the oppoſite place, reclining upon his elbow in a moſt painful and aukward ſituation, with his head raiſed above the end of the couch, that the œconomy of his hair might not ſuffer by the projection of his body. The Italian, being a thin limber creature, planted himſelf next to Pickle, without ſuſtaining any misfortune, but that of his ſtocking being torn by a ragged nail of the ſeat, as he raiſed his legs on a level with the reſt of his limbs. But the baron, who was neither ſo wieldy nor ſupple in his joints as his companions, flounced himſelf down with ſuch precipitation, that his feet ſuddenly tilting up, came in furious contact with the head of the marquis, and demoliſhed every curl in a twinkling, while his own ſkull, at the ſame inſtant, deſcended upon the ſide of his couch with ſuch violence, that his periwig was ſtruck off, and the whole room filled with pulvilio.

The drollery of diſtreſs that attended this diſaſter entirely vanquiſhed the affected gravity of our young gentleman, who was obliged to ſuppreſs his laughter by cramming his handkerchief in his mouth; for the bare-headed German aſked pardon with ſuch ridiculous confuſion, and the marquis admitted his apology with ſuch rueful complaiſance, as were ſufficient to awake the mirth of a quietiſt.

This misfortune being repaired as well as the circumſtances of the occaſion would permit, and every one ſettled according to the arrangement already deſcribed, the doctor graciouſly undertook to give ſome account of the diſhes as they occurred, that the company might be directed in their choice; and with an air of infinite ſatisfaction thus began: "This here, gentlemen, is a boiled gooſe, ſerved up in a ſauce compoſed of pepper, lovage, coriander, mint, rue, anchovies and oil; I wiſh for your ſakes, gentlemen, it was one of the geeſe of Ferrara, ſo much celebrated among the antients for the magnitude of their livers, one of which is ſaid to have weighed upwards of two pounds: with this food, exquiſite as it was, did the tyrant Heliogabalus regale his hounds. But I beg pardon, I had almoſt forgot the ſoup, which I hear is ſo neceſſary an article at all tables in France. At each end there are diſhes of the ſalacacabia of the Romans, one is made of parſley, pennyroyal, cheeſe, pine-tops, honey, vinegar, brine, eggs, cucumbers, onions and hen livers; the other is much the ſame as the ſoupe-maigre of this country. Then there is a loin of veal boiled with fennel and caraway-ſeed, on a pottage compoſed of pickle, oil, honey and flour, and a curious hachis of the lights

lights, liver and blood of an hare, together with a diſh of roaſted pigeons. Monſieur le baron, ſhall I help you to a plate of this ſoup?" The German, who did not at all diſapprove of the ingredients, aſſented to the propoſal, and ſeemed to reliſh the compoſition; while the marquis being aſked by the painter which of the *ſilly-kickabys* he choſe, was in conſequence of his deſire accommodated with a portion of the ſoupe-maigre; and the count, in lieu of ſpoon-meat, of which he ſaid he was no great admirer, ſupplied himſelf with a pigeon, therein conforming to the choice of our young gentleman, whoſe example he determined to follow through the whole courſe of the entertainment.

The Frenchman having ſwallowed the firſt ſpoonful, made a full pauſe, his throat ſwelled, as if an egg had ſtuck in his gullet, his eyes rolled, and his mouth underwent a ſeries of involuntary contractions and dilatations. Pallet, who looked ſtedfaſtly at this connoiſſeur, with a view of conſulting his taſte, before he himſelf would venture upon the ſoup, began to be diſturbed at theſe emotions, and obſerved with ſome concern, that the poor gentleman ſeemed to be going into a fit; when Peregrine aſſured him that theſe were ſymptoms of extacy, and for further confirmation, aſked the marquis how he found the ſoup. It was with infinite difficulty that his complaiſance could ſo far maſter his diſguſt, as to enable him to anſwer, "Altogether excellent, upon my honour!" And the painter being certified of his approbation, lifted the ſpoon to his mouth without ſcruple; but far from juſtifying the elogium of his taſter, when this precious compoſition diffuſed itſelf upon his pa-

late, he ſeemed to be deprived of all ſenſe and motion, and ſat like the leaden ſtatue of ſome river god, with the liquor flowing out at both ſides of his mouth.

The doctor, alarmed at this indecent phænomenon, earneſtly inquired into the cauſe of it; and when Pallet recovered his recollection, and ſwore that he would rather ſwallow porridge made of burning brimſtone, than ſuch an infernal meſs as that which he had taſted; the phyſician, in his own vindication, aſſured the company, that, except the uſual ingredients, he had mixed nothing in the ſoup but ſome ſal armoniac inſtead of the ancient nitrum, which could not now be procured; and appealed to the marquis, whether ſuch a ſuccedaneum was not an improvement on the whole. The unfortunate petit maitre, driven to the extremity of his condeſcenſion, acknowledged it to be a maſterly refinement; and deeming himſelf obliged, in point of honour, to evince his ſentiments by his practice, forced a few more mouthfuls of this diſagreeable potion down his throat, till his ſtomach was ſo much offended, that he was compelled to ſtart up of a ſudden; and, in the hurry of his elevation, overturned his plate into the boſom of the baron. The emergency of his occaſions would not permit him to ſtay and make apologies for this abrupt behaviour; ſo that he flew into another apartment, where Pickle found him puking, and croſſing himſelf with great devotion; and a chair, at his deſire, being brought to the door, he ſlipt into it more dead than alive, conjuring his friend Pickle to make his peace with the company, and in particular excuſe him to the baron, on account of the violent fit of illneſs with which he had been

been ſeized. It was not without reaſon that he employed a mediator; for when our hero returned to the dining-room, the German got up, and was under the hands of his own lacquey, who wiped the greaſe from a rich embroidered waiſtcoat, while he, almoſt frantic with his misfortune, ſtamped upon the ground, and in High Dutch curſed the unlucky banquet, and the impertinent entertainer, who all this time, with great deliberation, conſoled him for the diſaſter, by aſſuring him, that the damage might be repaired with ſome oil of turpentine and an hot iron. Peregrine, who could ſcarce refrain from laughing in his face, appeaſed his indignation, by telling him how much the whole company, and eſpecially the marquis, was mortified at the accident; and the unhappy ſalacacabia being removed, the places were filled with two pies, one of dormice liquored with ſyrup of white poppies, which the doctor had ſubſtituted in the room of toaſted poppy-ſeed, formerly eaten with honey, as a deſert; and the other compoſed of an hock of pork baked in honey.

Pallet hearing the firſt of theſe diſhes deſcribed, lifted up his hands and eyes, and with ſigns of loathing and amazement pronounced, "A pye made of dormice and ſyrup of poppies; Lord in heaven! what beaſtly fellows thoſe Romans were!" His friend checked him for his irreverent exclamation with a ſevere look, and recommended the veal, of which he himſelf chearfully eat, with ſuch encomiums to the company, that the baron reſolved to imitate his example, after having called for a bumper of Burgundy, which the phyſician, for his ſake, wiſhed to have been the true wine of Falernum. The painter

ſeeing nothing elſe upon the table which he would venture to touch, made a merit of neceſſity, and had recourſe to the veal alſo; although he could not help ſaying, that he would not give one ſlice of the roaſt beef of old England for all the dainties of a Roman emperor's table. But all the doctor's invitations and aſſurances could not prevail upon his gueſts to honour the hachis and the gooſe; and that courſe was ſucceeded by another, in which he told them were divers of thoſe diſhes, which among the antients had obtained the appellation of *politeles*, or magnificent. "That which ſmoaks in the middle (ſaid he) is a ſow's ſtomach, filled with a compoſition of minced pork, hog's brains, eggs, pepper, cloves, garlick, anniſeed, rue, ginger, oil, wine and pickle. On the right hand ſide are the teats and belly of a ſow, juſt farrowed, fried with ſweet wine, oil, flour, lovage and pepper. On the left is a fricaſſee of ſnails, fed, or rather purged, with milk. At that end next Mr. Pallet are fritters of pompions, lovage, origanum and oil; and here are a couple of pullets, roaſted and ſtuffed in the manner of Apicius.

The painter, who had by wry faces teſtified his abhorrence of the ſow's ſtomach, which he compared to a bagpipe, and the ſnails which had undergone purgation, no ſooner heard him mention the roaſted pullets, than he eagerly ſolicited a wing of the fowl; upon which the doctor deſired he would take the trouble of cutting them up, and accordingly ſent them round, while Mr. Pallet tucked the table cloth under his chin, and brandiſhed his knife and fork with ſingular addreſs: but ſcarce were they ſet down before him, when the tears ran down his cheeks, and he called aloud, in a manifeſt diſorder, "Z—ds! this

this is the eſſence of a whole bed of garlic!" That he might not, however, diſappoint or diſgrace the entertainer, he applied his inſtruments to one of the birds; and when he opened up the cavity, was aſſaulted by ſuch an irruption of intolerable ſmells, that, without ſtaying to diſengage himſelf from the cloth, he ſprung away, with an exclamation of, "Lord Jeſus!" and involved the whole table in havock, ruin, and confuſion.

Before Pickle could accompliſh his eſcape, he was ſauced with a ſyrup of the dormouſe pye, which went to pieces in the general wreck; and as for the Italian count, he was overwhelmed by the ſow's ſtomach, which burſting in the fall, diſcharged its contents upon his leg and thigh, and ſcalded him ſo miſerably, that he ſhrieked with anguiſh, and grinned with a moſt ghaſtly and horrible aſpect.

The baron, who ſat ſecure without the vortex of this tumult, was not at all diſpleaſed at ſeeing his companions involved in ſuch a calamity as that which he had already ſhared; but the doctor was confounded with ſhame and vexation. After having preſcribed an application of oil to the count's leg, he expreſſed his ſorrow for the miſadventure, which he openly aſcribed to want of taſte and prudence in the painter, who did not think proper to return, and make an apology in perſon; and proteſted that there was nothing in the fowls which could give offence to a ſenſible noſe, the ſtuffing being a mixture of pepper, lovage and aſſa fœtida, and the ſauce conſiſting of wine and herring-pickle, which he had uſed inſtead of the celebrated garum of the Romans; that famous pickle having been prepared ſome-

times of the ſcombri, which were a ſort of tunny fiſh, and ſometimes of the ſilurus, or ſhad fiſh: nay, he obſerved that there was a third kind, called garum hæmation, made of the guts, gills and blood of the thynnus.

The phyſician, finding it would be impracticable to re-eſtabliſh the order of the banquet, by preſenting again the diſhes which had been diſcompoſed, ordered every thing to be removed, a clean cloth to be laid, and the deſert to be brought in.

Mean while, he regretted his incapacity to give them a ſpecimen of the alieus, or fiſh meals of the ancients, ſuch as the jus diabaton, the conger-eel, which, in Galen's opinion, is hard of digeſtion, the cornuta, or gurnard, deſcribed by Pliny in his Natural Hiſtory, who ſays, the horns of many of them were a foot and a half in length; the mullet and lamprey, that were in the higheſt eſtimation of old, of which laſt Julius Cæſar borrowed ſix thouſand for one triumphal ſupper. He obſerved, that the manner of dreſſing them was deſcribed by Horace, in the account he gives of the entertainment to which Mæcenas was invited by the epicure Naſiedenus:

Affertur ſquillas inter Murena natantes, &c.

And told them, that they were commonly eaten with the rhus ſyriacum, a certain anodyne and aſtringent ſeed, which qualified the purgative nature of the fiſh. Finally, this learned phyſician gave them to underſtand, that though this was reckoned a luxurious diſh in the zenith of the Roman taſte, it was by no means comparable, in point

point of expence, to ſome preparations in vogue about the time of that abſurd voluptuary Heliogabalus, who ordered the brains of ſix hundred oſtriches to be compounded in one meſs.

By this time the deſert appeared, and the company were not a little rejoiced to ſee plain olives in ſalt and water: but what the maſter of the feaſt valued himſelf upon, was a ſort of jelly, which he affirmed to be preferable to the hypotrimma of Heſychius, being a mixture of vinegar, pickle and honey, boiled to a proper conſiſtence, and candied aſſa fœtida, which he aſſerted, in contradiction to Humelbergius and Liſter, was no other than the laſer ſyriacum, ſo precious, as to be ſold among the ancients to the weight of a ſilver penny. The gentlemen took his word for the excellency of this gum, but contented themſelves with the olives, which gave ſuch an agreeable reliſh to the wine, that they ſeemed very well diſpoſed to conſole themſelves for the diſgraces they had endured; and Pickle, unwilling to loſe the leaſt circumſtance of entertainment that could be enjoyed in their company, went in queſt of the painter, who remained in his penitentials in another apartment, and could not be perſuaded to re-enter the banqueting-room until Peregrine undertook to procure his pardon from thoſe whom he had injured. Having aſſured him of this indulgence, our young gentleman led him in like a criminal, bowing on all hands with an air of humility and contrition; and particularly addreſſing himſelf to the count, to whom he ſwore in Engliſh, as God was his ſaviour, he had no intent to affront man, woman, or child; but was fain to make the beſt of his way, that he might not give the honour-

able

able company cauſe of offence, by obeying the dictates of nature in their preſence.

When Pickle interpreted this apology to the Italian, Pallet was forgiven in very polite terms, and even received into favour by his friend the doctor, in conſequence of our hero's interceſſion: ſo that all the gueſts forgot their chagrin, and paid their reſpects ſo piouſly to the bottle, that in a ſhort time the Champaigne produced very evident effects in the behaviour of all preſent.

CHAP. XLV.

The painter is perſuaded to accompany Pickle *to a maſquerade in woman's apparel; is engaged in a troubleſome adventure, and with his companion conveyed to the* Baſtile.

THE painter, at the requeſt of Pickle, who had a deſign upon the count's ſenſe of hearing, favoured the company with the ſong of *Bumper Squire Jones*, which yielded infinite ſatisfaction to the baron; but affected the delicate ears of the Italian in ſuch a manner, that his features expreſſed aſtoniſhment and diſquiet; and by his ſudden and repeated journies to the door, it plainly appeared, that he was in the ſame predicament with thoſe who, as Shakeſpear obſerves, when the bagpipe ſings in the noſe, cannot contain their urine for affection.

With a view, therefore, of vindicating muſic from ſuch a barbarous taſte, Mr. Pallet had no ſooner performed his taſk, than the count honoured

noured his friends with ſome favourite airs of his own country, which he warbled with infinite grace and expreſſion, though they had not energy ſufficient to engage the attention of the German, who fell faſt aſleep upon his couch, and ſnored ſo loud, as to interrupt, and totally annul this raviſhing entertainment; ſo that they were fain to have recourſe again to the glaſs, which made ſuch innovation upon the brain of the phyſician, that he ſung divers odes of Anacreon to a tune of his own compoſing, and held forth upon the muſic and recitative of the ancients with great erudition; while Pallet, having found means to make the Italian acquainted with the nature of his profeſſion, harangued upon painting with wonderful volubility, in a language which (it was well for his own credit) the ſtranger did not underſtand.

At length the doctor was ſeized with ſuch a qualm, that he begged Peregrine to lead him to his chamber; and the baron being waked, retired with the count.

Peregrine being rendered frolickſome with the wine he had drank, propoſed that he and Pallet ſhould go to a maſquerade, which he recollected was to be given that night. The painter did not want curioſity and inclination to accompany him, but expreſſed his apprehenſion of loſing him in the ball; an accident which could not fail to be very diſagreeable, as he was an utter ſtranger to the language and the town. To obviate this objection, the landlady, who was of their council, adviſed him to appear in a woman's dreſs, which would lay his companion under the neceſſity of attending him with more care, as he could not with decency detach himſelf from

the lady whom he ſhould introduce; beſides, ſuch a ſuppoſed connexion would hinder the ladies of pleaſure from accoſting, and employing their ſeducing arts upon a perſon already engaged.

Our young gentleman, foreſeeing abundance of diverſion in the execution of this project, ſeconded the propoſal with ſuch importunity and addreſs, that the painter allowed himſelf to be habited in a ſuit belonging to the landlady, who alſo procured for him a maſk of domino, while Pickle provided himſelf with a Spaniſh dreſs. In this diſguiſe, which they put on about eleven o'clock, did they, attended by Pipes, ſet out in a Fiacre for the ball room, into which Pickle led this ſuppoſititious female, to the aſtoniſhment of the whole company, who had never ſeen ſuch an uncouth figure in the appearance of a woman.

After they had taken a view of all the remarkable maſques, and the painter had been treated with a glaſs of liqueur, his miſchievous companion gave him the ſlip, and vaniſhing in an inſtant, returned with another maſk and a domino over his habit, that he might enjoy Pallet's perplexity, and be at hand to protect him from inſult.

The poor painter having loſt his guide, was almoſt diſtracted with anxiety, and ſtalked about the room, in queſt of him, with ſuch huge ſtrides and oddity of geſture, that he was followed by a whole multitude, who gazed at him as a preternatural phænomenon. This attendance increaſed his uneaſineſs to ſuch a degree, that he could not help uttering a ſoliloquy aloud, in which he curſed his fate for having depended upon the promiſe of ſuch a wag; and ſwore, that

if once he was clear of this ſcrape, he would not bring himſelf into ſuch a premunire again for the whole kingdom of France.

Divers petit maitres underſtanding the maſque was a foreigner, who in all probability could not ſpeak French, made up to him in their turns, in order to diſplay their wit and addreſs, and teized him with ſeveral arch queſtions, to which he made no other anſwer than, "No *parly Francy*. Damn your chattering! Go about your buſineſs, can't ye?" Among the maſks was a nobleman, who began to be very free with the ſuppoſed lady, and attempted to plunge his hand into her boſom: but the painter was too modeſt to ſuffer ſuch indecent treatment; and when the gallant repeated his efforts in a manner ſtill more indelicate, lent him ſuch a box on the ear, as made the lights dance before him, and created ſuch a ſuſpicion of Pallet's ſex, that the Frenchman ſwore he was either a male or hermaphrodite, and inſiſted upon a ſcrutiny, for the ſake of his own honour, with ſuch obſtinacy of reſentment, that the fictitious nymph was in imminent danger, not only of being expoſed, but alſo of undergoing ſevere chaſtiſement, for having made ſo free with the prince's ear; when Peregrine, who ſaw and over-heard every thing that paſſed, thought it was high time to interpoſe; and accordingly, aſſerted his pretenſions to the inſulted lady, who was overjoyed at this proof of his protection.

The affronted gallant perſevered in demanding to know who ſhe was, and our hero as ſtrenuouſly refuſed to give him that ſatisfaction: ſo that high words enſued; and the prince threatening to puniſh his inſolence, the young gentleman, who was not ſuppoſed to know his quality, pointed

to

to the place where his own ſword uſed to hang, and ſnapping his fingers in his face, laid hold on the painter's arm, and led him to another part of the room, leaving his antagoniſt to the meditations of his own revenge.

Pallet having chid his conductor for his barbarous deſertion, made him acquainted with the difficulty in which he had been involved, and flatly telling him, he would not put it in his power to give him the ſlip again, held faſt by his arm during the remaining part of the entertainment, to the no ſmall diverſion of the company, whoſe attention was altogether engroſſed in the contemplation of ſuch an aukward, ungainly ſtalking apparition. At laſt, Pickle being tired of exhibiting this rareeſhew, complied with the repeated deſires of his companion, and handed her into the coach; which he himſelf had no ſooner entered, than they were ſurrounded by a file of muſqueteers, commanded by an exempt, who ordering the coach-door to be opened, took his place with great deliberation, while one of his detachment mounted the box, in order to direct the driver.

Peregrine at once conceived the meaning of this arreſt, and it was well for him that he had no weapon wherewith to ſtand upon his defence; for ſuch was the impetuoſity and raſhneſs of his temper, that had he been armed, he would have run all riſks rather than ſurrender himſelf to any odds whatever; but Pallet imagining that the officer was ſome gentleman who had miſtaken their carriage for his own, deſired his friend to undeceive the ſtranger; and when he was informed of the real ſtate of their condition, his knees began to ſhake, his teeth to chatter, and he uttered a moſt

a moſt doleful lamentation, importing his fear of being carried to ſome hideous dungeon of the Baſtile, where he ſhould ſpend the reſt of his days in miſery and horror, and never ſee the light of God's ſun, nor the face of a friend; but periſh in a foreign land, far removed from his family and connexions. Pickle damned him for his puſillanimity, and the exempt hearing a lady bemoan herſelf ſo piteouſly, expreſſed his mortification at being the inſtrument of giving her ſuch pain, and endeavoured to conſole them, by repreſenting the lenity of the French government, and the ſingular generoſity of the prince, by whoſe order they were apprehended.

Peregrine, whoſe diſcretion ſeemed to forſake him on all ſuch occaſions, exclaimed with great bitterneſs againſt the arbitrary adminiſtration of France, and inveighed with many expreſſions of contempt, againſt the character of the offended prince, whoſe reſentment, far from being noble, he ſaid, was pitiful, ungenerous and unjuſt. To this remonſtrance the officer made no reply, but ſhrugged up his ſhoulders in ſilent aſtoniſhment at the *hardieſſe* of the priſoner, and the Fiacre was juſt on the point of ſetting out, when they heard the noiſe of a ſcuffle at the back of the coach, and the voice of Tom Pipes, pronouncing "I'll be damn'd if I do." This truſty attendant had been deſired by one of the guard to deſcend from his ſtation in the rear, but as he reſolved to ſhare his maſter's fate, he took no notice of their intreaties, until they were ſeconded by force; and that he endeavoured to repel with his heel, which he applied with ſuch energy to the jaws of the ſoldier who firſt came in contact with him, that they emitted a craſhing ſound like a dried walnut between

between the grinders of a Templar in the pit. Exaſperated at this outrage, the other ſaluted Tom's poſteriors with his bayonet, which incommoded him ſo much, that he could no longer keep his poſt, but leaping upon the ground, gave his antagoniſt a chuck under the chin, and laid him upon his back, and then ſkipping over him with infinite agility, abſconded among the crowd of coachs, till he ſaw the guard mount before and behind upon his maſter's Fiacre, which no ſooner ſet forward than he followed at a ſmall diſtance, to reconnoitre the place where Peregrine ſhould be confined.

After having proceeded ſlowly through many windings and turnings to a part of Paris, in which Pipes was an utter ſtranger, the coach ſtopped at a great gate, with a wicket in the middle, which being opened at the approach of the carriage, the priſoners were admitted, and the guard returning with a Fiacre, Tom determined to watch in that place all night, that in the morning he might make ſuch obſervations, as might be conducive to the enlargement of his maſter.

CHAP. XLVI.

By the fidelity of Pipes, Jolter *is informed of his pupil's fate. Confers with the phyſician. Applies to the Embaſſador, who with great difficulty obtains the diſcharge of the priſoners, on certain conditions.*

THIS plan he executed notwithſtanding the pain of his wound, and the queſtions of the city guard both horſe and foot, to which he could make no other anſwer than "*Anglois, Anglois*;" and as ſoon as it was light, taking an accurate ſurvey of the caſtle (for ſuch it ſeemed to be) into which Peregrine and Pallet had been conveyed, together with its ſituation in reſpect to the river, he went home to the lodgings, and waking Mr. Jolter, gave him an account of the adventure. The governor wrung his hands in the utmoſt grief and conſternation, when he heard this unfortunate piece of news; he did not doubt that his pupil was impriſoned in the Baſtile for life; and in the anguiſh of his apprehenſion, curſed the day on which he had undertaken to ſuperintend the conduct of ſuch an imprudent young man, who had by reiterated inſults provoked the vengeance of ſuch a mild forbearing adminiſtration. That he might not, however, neglect any means in his power to extricate him from his preſent misfortune, he diſpatched Thomas to the doctor, with an account of his companion's fate, that they might join their intereſt in behalf of the captives; and the phyſician being informed of what had happened, immediately dreſſed himſelf and repaired to Jolter, whom he accoſted in theſe words:

words: "Now, ſir, I hope you are convinced of your error, in aſſerting that oppreſſion can never be the effect of arbitrary power. Such a calamity as this could never have happened under the Athenian democracy: nay, even when the tyrant Piſiſtratus got poſſeſſion of that commonwealth, he durſt not venture to rule with ſuch abſolute and unjuſt dominion. You ſhall ſee now that Mr. Pickle and my friend Pallet will fall a ſacrifice to the tyranny of lawleſs power; and in my opinion, we ſhall be acceſſary to the ruin of this poor enſlaved people, if we beſtir ourſelves in demanding, or imploring the releaſe of our unhappy countrymen; as we may thereby prevent the commiſſion of a flagrant crime, which would fill up the vengeance of heaven againſt the perpetrators, and perhaps be the means of reſtoring a whole nation to the unſpeakable fruition of freedom. For my own part, I ſhould rejoice to ſee the blood of my father ſpilt in ſuch a glorious cauſe, provided ſuch a victim would furniſh me with the opportunity of diſſolving the chains of ſlavery, and vindicating that liberty which is the birth-right of man. Then would my name be immortalized among the patriot heroes of antiquity, and my memory like that of Harmodius and Ariſtogiton, be honoured by ſtatues erected at the public expence." This rhapſody, which was delivered with great emphaſis and agitation, gave ſo much offence to Jolter, that without ſpeaking one word, he retired in great wrath to his own chamber, and the republican returned to his lodging, in full hope of his prognoſtic being verified in the death and deſtruction of Peregrine and the painter, which muſt give riſe to ſome renowned revolution, wherein he himſelf would act a prin-

a principal part. But the governor, whoſe imagination was not quite ſo warm and prolific, went directly to the Embaſſador, whom he informed of his pupil's ſituation, and beſought to interpoſe with the French miniſtry, that he and the other Britiſh ſubject might obtain their liberty.

His excellency aſked if Jolter could gueſs at the cauſe of his impriſonment, that he might be the better prepared to vindicate or excuſe his conduct; but neither he nor Pipes could give the ſmalleſt hint of intelligence on that ſubject; though he furniſhed himſelf from Tom's own mouth with a circumſtantial account of the manner in which his maſter had been arreſted, as well as of his own behaviour, and the diſaſter he had received on that occaſion. His Lordſhip never doubted that Pickle had brought this calamity upon himſelf by ſome unlucky prank he had played at the maſquerade; eſpecially when he underſtood that the young gentleman had drank freely in the afternoon, and been ſo whimſical as to go thither with a man in woman's apparel; and he that ſame day waited on the French miniſter, in full confidence of obtaining his diſcharge; but met with more difficulty than he expected, the court of France being extremely punctilious in every thing that concerns a prince of the blood; the Embaſſador was, therefore, obliged to talk in very high terms, and though the preſent circumſtances of the French politicks would not allow them to fall out with the Britiſh adminiſtration for trifles, all the favour he could procure, was a promiſe that Pickle ſhould be ſet at liberty, provided he would aſk pardon of the Prince to whom he had given offence. His excellency thought this was but a reaſonable condeſcenſion, ſuppoſing Peregrine

to

to have been in the wrong; and Jolter was admitted to him in order to communicate and reinforce his Lordſhip's advice, which was that he ſhould comply with the terms propoſed. The governor, who did not enter this gloomy fortreſs without fear and trembling, found his pupil in a diſmal apartment void of all furniture, but a ſtool and truckle-bed; the moment he was admitted, he perceived the youth whiſtling with great unconcern and working with his pencil at the bare wall, on which he had delineated a ludicrous figure labelled with the name of the nobleman whom he had affronted, and an Engliſh maſtiff with his leg lifted up, in the attitude of making water in his ſhoe. He had been even ſo preſumptuous as to explain the device with ſatirical inſcriptions in the French language, which when Jolter peruſed, his hair ſtood on end with affright. The very turnkey was confounded and overawed by the boldneſs of his behaviour, which he had never ſeen matched by any inhabitant of that place; and actually joined his friend in perſuading him to ſubmit to the eaſy demand of the miniſter. But our hero, far from embracing the counſel of this advocate, handed him to the door with great ceremony, and diſmiſſed him with a kick on the breech; and to all the ſupplications, and even tears of Jolter, made no other reply, than that he would ſtoop to no condeſcenſion, becauſe he had committed no crime; but would leave his caſe to the cognizance and exertion of the Britiſh court, whoſe duty it was to ſee juſtice done to its own ſubjects: he deſired, however, that Pallet, who was confined in another place, might avail himſelf of his own diſpoſition, which was ſufficiently pliable. But when the governor deſired

ſired to ſee his fellow-priſoner, the turnkey gave him to underſtand that he had received no orders relating to the lady, and therefore could not admit him in to her apartment; though he was complaiſant enough to tell him that ſhe ſeemed very much mortified at her confinement, and at certain times behaved as if her brain was not a little diſordered. Jolter thus baffled in all his endeavours, quitted the Baſtile with a heavy heart, and reported his fruitleſs negociation to the Embaſſador, who could not help breaking forth into ſome acrimonious expreſſions againſt the obſtinacy and inſolence of the young man, who, he ſaid, deſerved to ſuffer for his folly. Nevertheleſs he did not deſiſt from his repreſentations to the French miniſtry, which he found ſo unyielding, that he was obliged to threaten in plain terms, to make it a national concern; and not only write to his court for inſtructions, but even adviſe the council to make repriſals, and ſend ſome French gentleman in London to the Tower.

This intimation had an effect upon the miniſtry at Verſailles, who rather than run the riſk of incenſing a people whom it was neither their intereſt nor inclination to diſoblige, conſented to diſcharge the offenders, on condition that they ſhould leave Paris in three days after their enlargement. This propoſal was readily agreed to by Peregrine, who was now a little more tractable, and heartily tired of being cooped up in ſuch an uncomfortable abode, for the ſpace of three long days, without any ſort of communication or entertainment, but that which his own imagination ſuggeſted.

CHAP. XLVII.

Peregrine *makes himself merry at the expence of the painter, who curses his landlady, and breaks with the doctor.*

AS he could easily conceive the situation of his companion in adversity, he was unwilling to leave the place, until he had reaped some diversion from his distress, and with that view repaired to the dungeon of the afflicted painter, to which he had by this time free access. When he entered, the first object that presented itself to his eye, was so uncommonly ridiculous, that he could scarce preserve that gravity of countenance which he had affected in order to execute the joke he had planned. The forlorn Pallet sat upright in his bed in a dishabille that was altogether extraordinary. He had laid aside his monstrous hoop, together with his stays, gown and petticoat, wrapped his lappets about his head by way of night-cap, and wore his domino as a loose morning dress; his grizzled locks hung down about his lack-lustre eyes and tawny neck, in all the disorder of negligence; his grey-beard bristled about half an inch, through the remains of the paint with which his visage had been bedaubed, and every feature of his face was lengthened to the most ridiculous expression of grief and dismay. Seeing Peregrine come in, he started up in a sort of frantic extasy, and running towards him with open arms, no sooner perceived the woeful appearance into which our hero had modelled his physiognomy, then he stopped short all of a sudden,

ſudden, and the joy which had begun to take poſſeſſion of his heart, was in a moment diſpelled by the moſt rueful preſages; ſo that he ſtood in a moſt ludicrous poſture of dejection, like a malefactor at the Old Baily, when ſentence is about to be pronounced. Pickle taking him by the hand, heaved a profound ſigh, and after having proteſted that he was extremely mortified at being pitched upon as the meſſenger of bad news, told him with an air of ſympathy and infinite concern, that the French court having diſcovered his ſex, and reſolved, in conſideration of the outragious indignity he offered in public to a prince of the blood, to detain him in the Baſtile a priſoner for life; and that this ſentence was a mitigation obtained by the importunities of the Britiſh Embaſſador; the puniſhment ordained by law being no other than breaking alive upon the wheel. Theſe tidings aggravated the horrors of the painter to ſuch a degree, that he roared aloud, and ſkipped about the room, in all the extravagance of diſtraction; taking God and man to witneſs that he would rather ſuffer immediate death, than endure one year's impriſonment in ſuch a hideous place; and curſing the hour of his birth, and the moment on which he departed from his own country. "For my own part, (ſaid his tormentor in a hypocritical tone) I was obliged to ſwallow the bitter pill of making ſubmiſſions to the prince, who, as I had not preſumed to ſtrike him, received acknowledgments, in conſequence of which, I ſhall be this day ſet at liberty; and there is even one expedient left for the recovery of your freedom. It is, I own, a diſagreeable remedy, but one had better undergo a little mortification, than be for ever wretched.

Beſides, upon ſecond thoughts, I begin to imagine, that you will not for ſuch a trifle ſacrifice yourſelf to the unceaſing horrors of a ſolitary dungeon; eſpecially as your condeſcenſion will in all probability be attended with advantages which you could not otherwiſe enjoy." Pallet interrupting him with great eagerneſs, begged for the love of God that he would no longer keep him in the torture of ſuſpence, but mention that ſame remedy, which he was reſolved to ſwallow, let it be never ſo unpalatable.

Peregrine having thus played upon his paſſions of fear and hope, anſwered, "that as the offence was committed in the habit of a woman, which was a diſguiſe unworthy of the other ſex; the French court was of opinion that the delinquent ſhould be reduced to the neuter gender; ſo that there was an alternative at his own option, by which he had it in his power to regain immediate freedom." "What! cried the painter in deſpair, become a ſinger? Gadzooks! and the devil and all that, I'll rather lie ſtill where I am, and let myſelf be devoured by vermin." Then thruſting out his throat, "Here is my windpipe, (ſaid he) be ſo good, my dear friend, as to give it a ſlice or two; if you don't, I ſhall one of theſe days be found dangling in my garters. What an unfortunate raſcal I am! What a blockhead, and a beaſt, and a fool was I to truſt myſelf among ſuch a barbarous ruffian race? Lord forgive you, Mr. Pickle, for having been the immediate cauſe of my diſaſter; if you had ſtood by me from the beginning, according to your promiſe, I ſhould not have been teized by that coxcomb who has brought me to this paſs. And why did I put on this damn'd unlucky dreſs?

dreſs? Lard curſe that chattering Jezabel of a landlady, who adviſed ſuch a prepoſterous diſguiſe! a diſguiſe which hath not only brought me to this paſs, but alſo rendered me abominable to myſelf, and frightful to others; for, when I this morning ſignified to the turnkey, that I wanted to be ſhaved, he looked at my beard with aſtoniſhment, and croſſing himſelf, muttered his pater-noſter, believing me (I ſuppoſe) to be a witch, or ſomething worſe. And heaven confound that loathſome banquet of the ancients, which provoked me to drink too freely, that I might waſh away the taſte of that accurſed ſillikicaby."

Our young gentleman, having heard his lamentation to an end, excuſed himſelf for his conduct, by repreſenting, that he could not poſſibly foreſee the diſagreeable conſequences that attended it; and in the mean time, ſtrenuouſly counſelled him to ſubmit to the terms of this enlargement. He obſerved, that he was now arrived at that time of life, when the luſts of the fleſh ſhould be entirely mortified within him, and his greateſt concern ought to be the health of his ſoul, to which nothing could more effectually contribute than the amputation which was propoſed: that his body, as well as his mind, would profit by the change, becauſe he would have no dangerous appetite to gratify, and no carnal thoughts to divert him from the duties of his profeſſion; and his voice, which was naturally ſweet, would improve to ſuch a degree, that he would captivate the ears of all the people of faſhion and taſte, and in a little time be celebrated under the appellation of the Engliſh Seneſino.

Theſe arguments did not fail to make impreſſion upon the painter, who, nevertheleſs, ſtarted two objections to his compliance; namely, the diſgrace of the puniſhment, and the dread of his wife. Pickle undertook to obviate theſe difficulties, by aſſuring him, that the ſentence would be executed ſo privately, as never to tranſpire; and that his wife could not be ſo unconſcionable, after ſo many years of cohabitation, as to take exceptions to an expedient, by which ſhe would not only enjoy the converſation of her huſband, but even the fruits of thoſe talents which the knife would ſo remarkably refine.

Pallet ſhook his head at his laſt remonſtrance, as if he thought it would not be altogether convincing to his ſpouſe; but yielded to the propoſal, provided her conſent could be obtained. Juſt as he ſignified this condeſcenſion, the gaoler entered, and addreſſing himſelf to the ſuppoſed lady, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in having the honour to tell her, that ſhe was no longer a priſoner. As the painter did not underſtand one word of what he ſaid, Peregrine undertook the office of interpreter, and made his friend believe, the gaoler's ſpeech was no other than an intimation, that the miniſtry had ſent a ſurgeon to execute what was propoſed, and that the inſtruments and dreſſings were prepared in the next room. Alarmed and terrified at this ſudden appointment, he flew to the other end of the room, and ſnatching up an earthen chamber pot, which was the only offenſive weapon in the place, put himſelf in a poſture of defiance, and with many oaths threatened to try the temper of the barber's ſkull, if he ſhould preſume to ſet his noſe within the apartment.

The

The gaoler, who little expected such a reception, concluded that the poor gentlewoman had actually lost her wits, and retreated with precipitation, leaving the door open as he went out. Upon which Pickle, gathering up the particulars of his dress with great dispatch, crammed them into Pallet's arms, and taking notice that now the coast was clear, exhorted him to follow his footsteps to the gate, where a hackney coach stood for his reception. There being no time for hesitation, the painter took his advice, and without quitting the utensil, which in his hurry he forgot to lay down, sallied out in the rear of our hero, with all that wildness of terror and impatience which may be reasonably supposed to take possession of a man who flies from perpetual imprisonment. Such was the tumult of his agitation, that his faculty of thinking was for the present utterly overwhelmed, and he saw no object but his conductor, whom he followed by a sort of instinctive impulse, without regarding the keepers and centinels, who, as he passed with his cloaths under one arm, and his chamber-pot brandished above his head, were confounded, and even dismayed at the strange apparition.

During the whole course of this irruption, he ceased not to cry with great vociferation, "Drive, coachman, drive in the name of God!" And the carriage had proceeded the length of a whole street, before he manifested the least sign of reflection, but stared like the Gorgon's head, with his mouth wide open, and each particular hair crawling and twining like an animated serpent. At length, however, he began to recover the use of his senses, and asked if Peregrine thought him now out of all danger of being retaken.

This unrelenting wag, not yet ſatisfied with the affliction he had impoſed upon the ſufferer, anſwered with an air of doubt and concern, that he hoped they would not be overtaken, and prayed to God they might not be retarded by a ſtop of carriages. Pallet fervently joined in this ſupplication, and they advanced a few yards further, when the noiſe of a coach at full ſpeed behind them, invaded their ears; and Pickle having looked out of the window, withdrew his head in ſeeming confuſion and exclaimed, "Lord have mercy upon us! I wiſh that may not be a guard ſent after us. Methinks I ſaw the muzzle of a fuſil ſticking out of the coach." The painter hearing theſe tidings, that inſtant thruſt himſelf half out at the window, with his helmet ſtill in his hand, bellowing to the coachman as loud as he could roar, "Drive, damn ye drive! to the gates of Jericho and ends of the earth! Drive, you raggamuffin, you raſcallion, you hell-hound! drive us to the pit of hell, rather than we ſhould be taken."

Such a phantom could not paſs, without attracting the curioſity of the people, who ran to their doors and windows, in order to behold this object of admiration. With the ſame view that coach, which was ſuppoſed to be in purſuit of him, ſtopt juſt as the windows of each happened to be oppoſite; and Pallet looking behind, and ſeeing three men ſtanding upon the foot-board armed with canes, which his fear converted into fuſils, never doubted that his friend's ſuſpicion was juſt; but, ſhaking his jordan at the imaginary guard, ſwore he would ſooner die than part with his precious ware. The owner of the coach, who was a nobleman of the firſt quality, miſtook

miſtook him for ſome unhappy woman deprived of her ſenſes; and ordering his coachman to proceed, convinced the fugitive, to his infinite joy, that this was no more than a falſe alarm. He was not, for all that, freed from anxiety and trepidation; but our young gentleman, fearing his brain would not bear a repetition of the ſame joke, permitted him to gain his own lodgings, without further moleſtation.

His landlady meeting him on the ſtair, was ſo affected at his appearance, that ſhe ſcreamed aloud, and betook herſelf to flight; while he, curſing her with great bitterneſs, ruſhed into the apartment with the doctor, who, inſtead of receiving him with cordial embraces, and congratulating him upon his deliverance, gave evident tokens of umbrage and diſcontent; and even plainly told him, he hoped to have heard that he and Mr. Pickle had acted the glorious part of Cato; an event which would have laid the foundation of ſuch noble ſtruggles, as could not fail to end in happineſs and freedom; and that he had already made ſome progreſs in an ode that would have immortalized their names, and inſpired the flame of liberty in every honeſt breaſt. "There (ſaid he) I would have proved, that great talents, and high ſentiments of liberty, do reciprocally produce and aſſiſt each other; and illuſtrated my aſſertions with ſuch notes and quotations from the Greek writers, as would have opened the eyes of the moſt blind and unthinking, and touched the moſt callous and obdurate heart. *O fool! to think the man, whoſe ample mind muſt graſp whatever yonder ſtars ſurvey*—— Pray, Mr. Pallet, what is your opinion of that image of the mind's graſping the whole univerſe?"

For my own part, I can't help thinking it the moſt happy conception that ever entered my imagination.

The painter who was not ſuch a flaming enthuſiaſt in the cauſe of liberty, could not brook the doctor's reflections, which he thought ſavoured a little too much of indifference and deficiency in point of private friendſhip; and therefore ſeized the preſent opportunity of mortifying his pride, by obſerving, that the image was, without all doubt, very grand and magnificent; but that he had been obliged for the idea to Mr. Bayes in *The Rehearſal*, who values himſelf upon the ſame figure, conveyed in theſe words, *But all theſe clouds, when by the eye of reaſon graſp'd*, &c. Upon any other occaſion, the painter would have triumphed greatly in this detection; but ſuch was the flutter and confuſion of his ſpirits, under the apprehenſion of being retaken, that without further communication, he retreated to his own room, in order to reſume his own dreſs, which he hoped would alter his appearance in ſuch a manner, as to baffle all ſearch and examination; while the phyſician remained aſhamed and abaſhed, to find himſelf convicted of Bombaſt by a perſon of ſuch contemptible talents. He was offended at this proof of his memory, and ſo much enraged at his preſumption in exhibiting it, that he could never forgive his want of reverence, and took every opportunity of expoſing his ignorance and folly in the ſequel. Indeed, the ties of private affection were too weak to engage the heart of this republican, whoſe zeal for the community had entirely ſwallowed up his concern for individuals. He looked upon particular friendſhip as a paſſion unworthy of his ample ſoul, and

was

was a profeſſed admirer of L. Manlius, Junius Brutus, and thoſe later patriots of the ſame name, who ſhut their ears againſt the cries of nature, and reſiſted all the dictates of gratitude and humanity.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Pallet *conceives an hearty contempt for his fellow-traveller, and attaches himſelf to* Pickle, *who, nevertheleſs, perſecutes him with his miſchievous talent, upon the road to* Flanders.

IN the mean time, his companion having employed divers pails full of water, in cleanſing himſelf from the ſqualor of a jail, ſubmitted his face to the barber, tinged his eye-brows with a ſable hue, and being dreſſed in his own cloaths, ventured to viſit Peregrine, who was ſtill under the hands of his valet de chambre, and who gave him to underſtand, that his eſcape had been connived at, and that the condition of their deliverance was their departure from Paris in three days.

The painter was tranſported with joy, when he learnt that he ran no riſque of being retaken; and far from repining at the terms of his enlargement, would have willingly ſet out on his return to England that ſame afternoon; for the Baſtile had made ſuch an impreſſion upon him, that he ſtarted at the ſound of every coach, and turned pale at ſight of a French ſoldier. In the fullneſs of his heart, he complained of the doc-

tor's indifference, and related what had paſſed at their meeting with evident marks of reſentment and diſreſpect; which were not at all diminiſhed, when Jolter informed him of the phyſician's behaviour when he ſent for him, to confer about the means of abridging their confinement. Pickle himſelf was incenſed at his want of bowels, and perceiving how much he had ſunk in the opinion of his fellow-traveller, reſolved to encourage theſe ſentiments of diſguſt, and occaſionally foment the diviſion to a downright quarrel, which he foreſaw would produce ſome diverſion, and perhaps expoſe the poet's character in ſuch a light, as would effectually puniſh him for his arrogance and barbarity. With this view, he levelled ſeveral ſatirical jokes at the doctor's pedantry and want of taſte, which had appeared ſo conſpicuous in the quotations he had got by heart, from ancient authors, in his affected diſdain of the beſt pictures in the world; which, had he been endowed with the leaſt ſhare of diſcernment, he could not have beheld with ſuch inſenſibility; and laſtly, in his ridiculous banquet, which none but an egregious coxcomb, devoid of all elegance and ſenſe, would have prepared, or preſented to rational beings. In a word, our young gentleman played the artillery of his wit againſt him with ſuch ſucceſs, that the painter ſeemed to wake from a dream, and went home with the moſt hearty contempt for the perſon he had formerly adored.

Inſtead of uſing the privilege of a friend, to enter his apartment without ceremony, he ſent in his ſervant with a meſſage, importing, that he intended to ſet out from Paris next day, in company with Mr. Pickle, and deſiring to know whether

whether or not he was, or would be prepared for the journey. The doctor, ſtruck with the manner, as well as the matter, of this intimation, went immediately to Pallet's room, and demanded to know the cauſe of ſuch a ſudden determination, without his privity or concurrence; and when he underſtood the neceſſity of their affairs, rather than travel by himſelf, he ordered his baggage to be packed up, and ſignified his readineſs to conform to the emergency of the caſe; though he was not at all pleaſed with the cavalier behaviour of Pallet, to whom he threw out ſome hints of his own importance, and the immenſity of his condeſcenſion, in favouring him with ſuch marks of regard. But by this time theſe inſinuations had loſt their effect upon the painter, who told him, with an arch ſneer, that he did not at all queſtion his learning and abilities, and particularly his ſkill in cookery, which he ſhould never forget while his palate retained its function; but nevertheleſs adviſed him, for the ſake of the degenerate eaters of theſe days, to ſpare a little of his ſal armoniac in the next ſillykickaby he ſhould prepare; and bate ſomewhat of the devil's dung, which he had ſo plentifully crammed into the roaſted fowls, unleſs he had a mind to convert his gueſts into patients, with a view of licking himſelf whole for the expence of the entertainment.

The phyſician, nettled at theſe ſarcaſms, eyed him with a look of indignation and diſdain; and being unwilling to expreſs himſelf in Engliſh, leſt, in the courſe of the altercation, Pallet ſhould be ſo much irritated as to depart without him, he vented his anger in Greek. The painter, though by the ſound he ſuppoſed this quotation to be Greek,

Greek, complimented his friend upon his knowledge in the Welch language, and found means to rally him quite out of temper; ſo that he retired to his own chamber in the utmoſt wrath and mortification, and left his antagoniſt exulting o'er the victory he had won.

While theſe things paſſed between theſe originals, Peregrine waited upon the Embaſſador, whom he thanked for his kind interpoſition, acknowledging the indiſcretion of his own conduct, with ſuch appearance of conviction, and promiſes of reformation, that his excellency freely forgave him for all the trouble he had been put to on his account, fortified him with ſenſible advices, and aſſuring him of his continual favour and friendſhip, gave him, at parting, letters of introduction to ſeveral perſons of quality belonging to the Britiſh court.

Thus diſtinguiſhed, our young gentleman took leave of all his French acquaintance, and ſpent the evening with ſome of thoſe who had enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his intimacy and confidence; while Jolter ſuperintended his domeſtic concerns, and with infinite joy beſpoke a poſt-chaiſe and horſes, in order to convey him from a place where he lived in continual apprehenſion of ſuffering by the dangerous diſpoſition of his pupil. Every thing being adjuſted according to their plan, they and their fellow-travellers next day dined together, and about four in the afternoon took their departure in two chaiſes, eſcorted by the valet de chambre, Pipes and the doctor's lacquey on horſeback, well furniſhed with arms and ammunition, in caſe of being attacked by robbers on the road.

It was about eleven o'clock at night when they arrived at Senlis, which was the place at which they propoſed to lodge, and where they were obliged to knock up the people of the inn, before they could have their ſupper prepared. All the proviſion in the houſe was but barely ſufficient to furniſh one indifferent meal; however, the painter conſoled himſelf for the quantity with the quality of the diſhes, one of which was a fricaſſee of rabbit, a preparation that he valued above all the dainties that ever ſmoaked upon the table of the ſumptuous Heliogabalus.

He had no ſooner expreſſed himſelf to this effect, than our hero, who was almoſt inceſſantly laying traps for diverſion at his neighbour's expence, laid hold on the declaration; and recollecting the ſtory of Scipio and the muleteer in Gil Blas, reſolved to perpetrate a joke upon the ſtomach of Pallet, which ſeemed particularly well diſpoſed to an hearty ſupper. He accordingly digeſted his plan; and the company being ſeated at table, affected to gaze with peculiar eagerneſs at the painter, who had helped himſelf to a large portion of the fricaſſee, and began to ſwallow it with infinite reliſh. Pallet, notwithſtanding the keenneſs of his appetite, could not help taking notice of Pickle's demeanour; and making a ſhort pauſe in the exerciſe of his grinders, "You are ſurpriſed (ſaid he) to ſee me make ſo much diſpatch; but I was extremely hungry, and this is one of the beſt fricaſſees I ever taſted: the French are very expert in theſe diſhes, that I muſt allow; and, upon my conſcience, I would never deſire to eat a more delicate rabbit than this that lies upon my plate."

Peregrine made no other reply to this encomium, than the repetition of the word rabbit! with a note of admiration, and ſuch a ſignificant ſhake of the head, as effectually alarmed the other, who inſtantly ſuſpended the action of his jaws, and with the morſel half chewed in his mouth, ſtared round him with a certain ſtolidity of apprehenſion, which is eaſier conceived than deſcribed, until his eyes encountered the countenance of Thomas Pipes, who being inſtructed, and poſted oppoſite to him for the occaſion, exhibited an arch grin, that completed the painter's diſorder. Afraid of ſwallowing his mouthful, and aſhamed to diſpoſe of it any other way, he ſat ſome time in a moſt diſtreſſed ſtate of ſuſpence; and being queſtioned by Mr. Jolter touching his calamity, made a violent effort of the muſcles of his gullet, which with difficulty performed their office; and then, with great confuſion and concern, aſked if Mr. Pickle ſuſpected the rabbit's identity. The young gentleman aſſuming a myſterious air, pretended ignorance of the matter; obſerving, that he was apt to ſuſpect all diſhes of that kind, ſince he had been informed of the tricks which were commonly played at inns in France, Italy, and Spain; and recounted that paſſage in Gil Blas, which we have hinted at above; ſaying, he did not pretend to be a connoiſſeur in animals, but the legs of the creature which compoſed that fricaſſee did not, in his opinion, reſemble thoſe of the rabbits he had uſually ſeen. This obſervation had an evident effect upon the features of the painter, who, with certain ſigns of loathing and aſtoniſhment, exclaimed, "Lord Jeſus!" and appealed to Pipes for a diſcovery of the truth, by aſking if he knew any thing of the affair.

affair. Tom very gravely replied, that he did ſuppoſe the food was wholeſome enough, for he had ſeen the ſkin and feet of a ſpecial ram-cat, new flea'd, hanging upon the door of a ſmall pantry adjoining to the kitchen.

Before this ſentence was uttered, Pallet's belly ſeemed to move in contact with his back-bone, his colour changed, no part but the whites of his eyes were to be ſeen, he dropped his lower jaw, and fixing his hands in his ſides, reached with ſuch convulſive agonies, as amazed and diſconcerted the whole company; and what augmented his diſorder was the tenacious retention of his ſtomach, which abſolutely refuſed to part with its contents, notwithſtanding all the energy of his abhorrence, which threw him into a cold ſweat, and almoſt into a ſwoon.

Pickle, alarmed at his condition, aſſured him it was a genuine rabbit, and that he had tutored Pipes to ſay otherwiſe for the joke's ſake. But this confeſſion he conſidered as a friendly artifice of Pickle's compaſſion, and therefore it had little effect upon his conſtitution. By the aſſiſtance, however, of a large bumper of brandy, his ſpirits were recruited, and his recollection ſo far recovered, that he was able to declare, with divers contorſions of face, that the diſh had a particular rankneſs of taſte, which he had imputed partly to the nature of the French coney, and partly to the compoſition of their ſauces; then he inveighed againſt the infamous practices of French publicans, attributing ſuch impoſition to their oppreſſive government, which kept them ſo neceſſitous, that they were tempted to exerciſe all manner of knavery upon their unwary gueſts.

Jolter,

Jolter, who could not find in his heart to let ſlip any opportunity of ſpeaking in favour of the French, told him "that he was a very great ſtranger to their police, elſe he would know, that if upon information to the magiſtrate, it ſhould appear that any traveller, native or foreigner, has been impoſed upon, or ill-treated by a publican, the offender would be immediately obliged to ſhut up his houſe, and if his behaviour had been notorious, he himſelf would be ſent to the gallies, without the leaſt heſitation; and as for the diſh which has been made the occaſion of your preſent diſorder, (ſaid he) I will take upon me to affirm it was prepared of a genuine rabbit, which was ſkinned in my preſence; and in confirmation of what I aſſert, though ſuch fricaſſees are not the favourites of my taſte, I will eat a part of this without ſcruple." So ſaying, he ſwallowed ſeveral mouthfuls of the queſtioned coney, and Pallet ſeemed to eye it again with inclination; nay, he even reſumed his knife and fork, and being juſt on the point of applying them, was ſeized with another qualm of apprehenſion, that broke out in an exclamation of, "After all, Mr. Jolter, if it ſhould be a real ram-cat—Lord have mercy upon me! here is one of the claws." With theſe words he preſented the tip of a toe, of which Pipes had ſnipt off five or ſix from a duck that was roaſted, and purpoſely ſcattered them in the fricaſſee; and the governor could not behold this teſtimonial without ſymptoms of uneaſineſs and remorſe; ſo that he and the painter ſat ſilenced and abaſhed, and made faces at each other, while the phyſician, who hated them both, exulted over their affliction, bidding them be of good chear, and proceed

ceed with their meal; for he was ready to demonſtrate, that the fleſh of a cat was as nouriſhing and delicious as veal or mutton, provided they could prove, that the ſaid cat was not of the boar-kind, and had fed chiefly on vegetable diet, or even confined its carnivorous appetite to rats and mice, which he affirmed to be dainties of exquiſite taſte and flavour. He ſaid, it was a vulgar miſtake to think that all fleſh-devouring creatures were unfit to be eaten; witneſs the conſumption of ſwine and ducks, animals that delight in carnage, as well as fiſh, and prey upon each other, and feed on bait and carrion; together with the demand for bear, of which the beſt hams in the world are made. He then obſerved that the Negroes on the coaſt of Guinea, who are a healthy and vigorous people, prefer cats and dogs to all other fare; and mentioned from hiſtory ſeveral ſieges, during which the inhabitants, who were blocked up, lived upon theſe animals, and had recourſe even to human fleſh, which to his certain knowledge, was in all reſpects preferable to pork; for, in the courſe of his ſtudies, he had, for the experiment's ſake, eaten a ſteak cut from the buttock of a perſon who had been hanged.

This diſſertation, far from compoſing, increaſed the diſquiets in the ſtomachs of the governor and painter, who hearing the laſt illuſtration, turned their eyes upon the orator, at the ſame inſtant, with looks of horror and diſguſt; and the one muttering the term *Cannibal*, and the other pronouncing the word *abomination*, they roſe from table in a great hurry, and running towards another apartment, juſtled with ſuch violence in the paſſage, that both were overturned by the ſhock, which

which alſo contributed to the effect of their nauſea, that mutually defiled them as they lay.

CHAP. XLIX.

Nor is the phyſician ſacred from his ridicule. They reach Arras, *where our adventurer engages in play with two* French *officers, who next morning give the landlord an intereſting proof of their importance.*

THE doctor remained ſullen and dejected during the whole journey: not but that he attempted to recover his importance, by haranguing upon the Roman highways, when Mr. Jolter deſired the company to take notice of the fine pavement upon which they travelled from Paris into Flanders; but Pallet, who thought he had now gained the aſcendency over the phyſician, exerted himſelf in maintaining the ſuperiority he had acquired, by venting various ſarcaſms upon his ſelf-conceit and affectation of learning, and even uttering puns and conundrums upon the remarks which the republican retailed. When he talked of the Flaminian Way, the painter queſtioned if it was a better pavement than the Flaminian way on which they travelled: and the doctor having obſerved, that this road was made for the convenience of drawing the French artillery into Flanders, which was often the ſeat of war; his competitor in wit replied with infinite vivacity, "There are more great guns than the French king

king knows of drawn along this cauſeway, doctor."

Encouraged by the ſucceſs of theſe efforts, which tickled the imagination of Jolter, and drew ſmiles as (he imagined) of approbation from our hero, he ſported in many other æquivoques of the ſame nature; and at dinner told the phyſician, that he was like the root of the tongue, as being curſedly down in the mouth.

By this time, ſuch was the animoſity ſubſiſting between thoſe quondam friends, that they never converſed together, except with a view of expoſing each other to the ridicule or contempt of their fellow travellers. The doctor was at great pains to point out the folly and ignorance of Pallet in private to Peregrine, who was often conjured in the ſame manner by the painter, to to take notice of the phyſician's want of manners and taſte. Pickle pretended to acquieſce in the truth of their mutual ſeverity, which indeed was extremely juſt, and by malicious inſinuations blew up their contention, with a view of bringing it to open hoſtility. But, both ſeemed ſo averſe to deeds of mortal purpoſe, that for a long time his arts were baffled, and he could not ſpirit them up to any pitch of reſentment higher than ſcurrilous repartee.

Before they reached Arras, the city gates were ſhut, ſo that they were obliged to take up their lodging at an indifferent houſe in the ſuburbs, where they found a couple of French officers, who had alſo rode poſt from Paris ſo far on their way to Liſle. Theſe gentlemen were about the age of thirty, and their deportment diſtinguiſhed by ſuch an air of inſolence, as diſguſted our hero, who nevertheleſs, accoſted them politely in the

yard,

yard, and propoſed that they ſhould ſup together. They thanked him for the honour of his invitation, which, however, they declined, upon pretence of having ordered ſomething for themſelves; but promiſed to wait upon him and his company immediately after their repaſt.

This they accordingly performed; and after having drank a few glaſſes of Burgundy, one of them aſked, if the young gentleman would, for paſtime, take an hand at quadrille. Peregrine eaſily divined the meaning of this propoſal, which was made with no other view than that of fleecing him and his fellow-travellers; for he well knew to what ſhifts a ſubaltern in the French ſervice is reduced, in order to maintain the appearance of a gentleman, and had reaſon to believe that moſt of them were ſharpers from their youth: but, as he depended a good deal upon his own penetration and addreſs, he gratified the ſtranger's deſire; and a party was inſtantly formed of the painter, the phyſician, the propoſer and himſelf, the other officer having profeſſed himſelf utterly ignorant of the game; yet, in the courſe of the play he took his ſtation at the back of Pickle's chair, which was oppoſite to his friend, on pretence of amuſing himſelf with ſeeing his manner of conducting the cards. The youth was not ſuch a novice but that he perceived the deſign of this palpable piece of behaviour, which, notwithſtanding he overlooked for the preſent, with a view of flattering their hopes in the beginning, that they might be the more effectually puniſhed, by their diſappointment in the end.

The game was ſcarce begun, when by the reflection of a glaſs he diſcerned the officer at his back, making ſigns to his companion, who, by theſe

theſe pre-concerted geſtures, was perfectly informed of the contents of Peregrine's hand, and of conſequence fortunate in the courſe of play.

Thus they were allowed to enjoy the fruits of their dexterity, until their money amounted to ſome Loui's; when our young gentleman, thinking it high time to do himſelf juſtice, ſignified in very polite terms to the gentleman who ſtood behind him, that he could never play with eaſe and deliberation when he was overlooked by any by-ſtander, and begged that he would have the goodneſs to be ſeated.

As this was a remonſtrance which the ſtranger could not with any ſhew of breeding reſiſt, he aſked pardon, and retired to the chair of the phyſician, who frankly told him, that it was not the faſhion of his country for one to ſubmit his hand to the peruſal of a ſpectator; and when, in conſequence of this rebuff, he wanted to quarter himſelf upon the painter, he was refuſed by a wave of the hand, and ſhake of the head, with an exclamation of, *Pardonnez moi!* which was repeated with ſuch emphaſis, as diſcompoſed his effrontery, and he found himſelf obliged to ſit down in a ſtate of mortification.

The odds being thus removed, fortune proceeded in her uſual channel; and though the Frenchman, deprived of his ally, endeavoured to practiſe divers ſtrokes of fineſſe, the reſt of the company obſerved him with ſuch vigilance and caution, as baffled all his attempts, and in a very little time he was compelled to part with his winning: but having engaged in the match with an intention of taking all advantages, whether fair or unfair, that his ſuperior ſkill ſhould

give

give him over the Engliſhmen, the money was not refunded without a thouſand diſputes, in the courſe of which he eſſayed to intimidate his antagoniſt, with high words, which were retorted by our hero with ſuch intereſt, as convinced him that he had miſtaken his man, and perſuaded him to make his retreat in quiet. Indeed, it was not without cauſe that they repined at the bad ſucceſs of their enterprize; becauſe, in all likelihood, they had nothing to depend upon for the preſent but their own induſtry, and knew not how to defray their expences on the road, except by ſome acquiſition of this kind.

Next morning they roſe at day-break, and reſolving to anticipate their fellow-lodgers, beſpoke poſt-horſes as ſoon as they could be admitted into the city; ſo that when our company appeared, their beaſts were ready in the yard; and they only waited to diſcuſs the bill, which they had ordered to be made out. The landlord of the inn preſented his carte with fear and trembling to one of thoſe ferocious cavaliers, who no ſooner caſt his eye upon the ſum total, than he diſcharged a volley of dreadful oaths; and aſked, if the king's officers were to be treated in that manner. The poor publican proteſted, with great humility, that he had the utmoſt reſpect for his Majeſty, and every thing that belonged to him; and that, far from conſulting his own intereſt, all that he deſired was, to be barely indemnified for the expence of their lodging.

This condeſcenſion ſeemed to have no other effect than that of encouraging their arrogance. They ſwore his extortion ſhould be explained to the commandant of the town, who would, by making him a public example, teach other innkeepers

keepers how to behave towards men of honour; and threatened with ſuch confidence of indignation, that the wretched landlord, dreading the conſequence of their wrath, implored pardon in the moſt abject manner, begging with many ſupplications, that he might have the pleaſure of lodging them at his own charge. This was a favour which he with great difficulty obtained; they chid him ſeverely for his impoſition, exhorted him to have more regard for his own conſcience, as well as for the convenience of his gueſts; and cautioning him in particular touching his behaviour to the gentlemen of the army, mounted their horſes, and rode off in great ſtate, leaving him very thankful for having ſo ſucceſſfully appeaſed the choler of two officers, who wanted either inclination or ability to pay their bill: for experience had taught him to be apprehenſive of all ſuch travellers, who commonly lay the landlord under contribution, by way of atonement for the extravagance of his demands, even after he has profeſſed his willingneſs to entertain them on their own terms.

CHAP. L.

Peregrine *moralizes upon their behaviour, which is condemned by the doctor, and defended by the governor. They arrive in ſafety at* Liſle, *dine at an ordinary, viſit the citadel. The phyſician quarrels with a* North-Briton, *who is put in arreſt.*

THESE honourable adventurers being gone, Peregrine, who was preſent during the tranſaction, informed himſelf of the particulars from the mouth of the inn-keeper himſelf, who took God and the ſaints to witneſs, that he ſhould have been a loſer by their cuſtom, even if the bill had been paid; becauſe he was on his guard againſt their objections, and had charged every article at an under price: but ſuch was the authority of officers in France, that he durſt not diſpute the leaſt circumſtance of their will; for had the caſe come under the cognizance of the magiſtrate, he muſt in courſe have ſuffered by the maxims of their government, which never fail to abet the oppreſſion of the army; and beſides run the riſque of incurring their future reſentment, which would be ſufficient to ruin him from top to bottom.

Our hero boiled with indignation at this inſtance of injuſtice and arbitrary power; and turning to his governor, aſked if this too was a proof of the happineſs enjoyed by the French people. Jolter replied, that every human conſtitution muſt in ſome things be imperfect; and owned, that in this kingdom gentlemen were more countenanced than the vulgar, becauſe it was to be preſumed,

ſumed, that their own ſentiments of honour and ſuperior qualifications, would entitle them to this preheminence, which had alſo a retroſpective view to the merit of their anceſtors, in conſideration of which they were at firſt ennobled: but he affirmed, that the inn-keeper had miſrepreſented the magiſtracy, which in France never failed to puniſh flagrant outrages and abuſe, without reſpect of perſons.

The painter approved of the wiſdom of the French government, in bridling the inſolence of the mob, by which, he aſſured them, he had often ſuffered in his own perſon; having been often beſpattered by hackney-coachmen, juſtled by draymen and porters, and reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms by the watermen of London, where he had once loſt his bag and a conſiderable quantity of hair, which had been cut off by ſome raſcal in his paſſage through Ludgate, during the lord mayor's proceſſion. On the other hand the doctor with great warmth alledged, that thoſe officers ought to ſuffer death, or baniſhment at leaſt, for having plundered the people in this manner, which was ſo impudent and barefaced, as plainly to prove they were certain of eſcaping with impunity, and that they were old offenders in the ſame degree of delinquency. He ſaid, that the greateſt man in Athens would have been condemned to perpetual exile, and ſeen his eſtate confiſcated for public uſe, had he dared in ſuch a licentious manner to violate the rights of a fellow citizen; and as for the little affronts to which a man may be ſubject, from the petulance of the multitude, he looked upon them as glorious indications of liberty, which ought not to be repreſſed, and would at any time

rejoice to find himſelf overthrown in a kennel by the inſolence of a ſon of freedom, even though the fall ſhould coſt him a limb: adding, by way of illuſtration, that the greateſt pleaſure he ever enjoyed, was in ſeeing a duſtman wilfully overturn a gentleman's coach, in which two ladies were bruiſed, even to the danger of their lives. Pallet, ſhocked at the extravagance of this declaration, "If that be the caſe (ſaid he) I wiſh you may ſee every bone in your body broke, by the firſt carman you meet in the ſtreets of London."

This argument being diſcuſſed, and the reckoning diſcharged without any deduction, although the landlord, in ſtating the articles, had an eye to the loſs he had ſuſtained by his own countrymen, they departed from Arras, and arrived in ſafety at Liſle, about two o'clock in the afternoon.

They had ſcarce taken poſſeſſion of their lodgings, in a large hotel on the Grande Place, when the inn-keeper gave them to underſtand, that he kept an ordinary below, which was frequented by ſeveral Engliſh gentlemen who reſided in town, and that dinner was then upon the table. Peregrine, who ſeized all opportunities of obſerving new characters, perſuaded his company to dine in public; and they were accordingly conducted to the place, where they found a mixture of Scotch and Dutch officers, who had come from Holland to learn their exerciſes at the academy, and ſome gentlemen in the French ſervice, who were upon garriſon-duty in the citadel. Among theſe laſt was a perſon about the age of fifty, of a remarkably genteel air and polite addreſs, dignified with a Malteſe croſs, and diſtinguiſhed by the particular veneration

of

of all thoſe who knew him. When he underſtood that Pickle and his friends were travellers, he accoſted the youth in Engliſh, which he ſpoke tolerably well; and as they were ſtrangers, offered to attend them in the afternoon to all the places worth ſeeing in Liſle. Our hero thanked him for his exceſs of politeneſs, which (he ſaid) was peculiar to the French nation; and ſtruck with his engaging appearance, induſtriouſly courted his converſation, in the courſe of which he learnt, that this chevalier was a man of good ſenſe and great experience, that he was perfectly well acquainted with the greateſt part of Europe, had lived ſome years in England, and was no ſtranger to the conſtitution and genius of that people.

Having dined, and drank to the healths of the Engliſh and French kings, two Fiacres were called, in one of which the knight, with one of his companions, the governor and Peregrine ſeated themſelves, the other being occupied by the phyſician, Pallet, and two Scottiſh officers, who propoſed to accompany them in their circuit. The firſt place they viſited was the citadel, round the ramparts of which they walked, under the conduct of the knight, who explained with great accuracy the intention of every particular fortification belonging to that ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs; and when they had ſatisfied their curioſity, took coach again, in order to view the arſenal, which ſtands in another quarter of the town: but, juſt as Pickle's carriage had croſſed the Promenade, he heard his own name bawled aloud by the painter; and ordering the Fiacre to ſtop, ſaw Pallet with one half of his body thruſt out at the window of the other coach, crying

with a terrified look, "Mr. Pickle, Mr. Pickle, for the love of God! halt, and prevent bloodſhed, elſe here will be carnage and cutting of throats." Peregrine, ſurprized at this exclamation, immediately alighted, and advancing to the other vehicle, found one of their military companions ſtanding upon the ground, at the further ſide of the coach, with his ſword drawn, and fury in his countenance; and the phyſician, with a quivering lip and haggard aſpect, ſtruggling with the other who had interpoſed in the quarrel, and detained him in his place.

Our young gentleman, upon inquiry, found that this animoſity had ſprung from a diſpute that happened upon the ramparts, touching the ſtrength of the fortification, which the doctor, according to cuſtom, undervalued, becauſe it was a modern work; ſaying, that by the help of the military engines uſed among the antients, and a few thouſands of pioneers, he would engage to take it in leſs than ten days after he ſhould ſit down before it. The North-Briton, who was as great a pedant as the phyſician, having ſtudied fortification, and made himſelf maſter of Cæſar's Commentaries and Polybius, with the obſervations of Folard, affirmed, that all the methods of beſieging practiſed by the ancients, would be utterly ineffectual againſt ſuch a plan as that of the citadel of Liſle; and began to compare the Vineæ, Aggeres, Arietes, Scorpiones and Catapultæ of the Romans, with the trenches, mines, batteries and mortars uſed in the preſent art of war. The republican, finding himſelf attacked upon what he thought his ſtrong ſide, ſummoned all his learning to his aid; and deſcribing the famous ſiege of Platæa, happened to miſquote a

paſſage

paſſage of Thucydides, in which he was corrected by the other, who having been educated for the church, was alſo a connoiſſeur in the Greek language. The doctor, incenſed at being detected in ſuch a blunder, in preſence of Pallet, who (he knew) would promulgate his ſhame, told the officer, with great arrogance, that his objection was frivolous, and that he muſt not pretend to diſpute on theſe matters with one who had conſidered them with the utmoſt accuracy and care. His antagoniſt, piqued at this ſupercilious inſinuation, replied with great heat, that for ought he knew, the doctor might be a very expert apothecary, but that in the art of war, and knowledge in the Greek tongue, he was no other than an ignorant pretender. This aſſeveration produced an anſwer full of virulence, including a national reflection upon the ſoldier's country; and the contention roſe to mutual abuſe, when it was ſuppreſſed by the admonitions of the other two, who begged they would not expoſe themſelves in a ſtrange place, but behave themſelves like fellow-ſubjects and friends. They accordingly ceaſed reviling each other, and the affair was ſeemingly forgot; but, after they had reſumed their places in the coach, the painter unfortunately aſked the meaning of the word Tortoiſe, which he had heard them mention among the Roman implements of war. This queſtion was anſwered by the phyſician, who deſcribed the nature of this expedient ſo little to the ſatisfaction of the officer, that he contradicted him flatly, in the midſt of his explanation; a circumſtance which provoked the republican to ſuch a degree, that in the temerity of his paſſion, he uttered the epithet *impertinent*

ſcoundrel; which was no ſooner pronounced than the Caledonian made manual application to his noſe, and leaping out of the coach, ſtood waiting for him on the plain; while he (the phyſician) made feeble efforts to join him, being eaſily retained by the other ſoldier; and Pallet, dreading the conſequence in which he himſelf might be involved, bellowed aloud for prevention.

Our hero endeavoured to quiet the commotion, by repreſenting to the Scot, that he had already taken ſatisfaction for the injury he had received; and telling the doctor, that he had deſerved the chaſtiſement which was inflicted upon him: but the officer (encouraged perhaps by the confuſion of his antagoniſt) inſiſted upon his aſking pardon for what he had ſaid; and the doctor, believing himſelf under the protection of his friend Pickle, far from agreeing to ſuch conceſſion, breathed nothing but defiance and revenge: ſo that the chevalier, in order to prevent miſchief, put the ſoldier under arreſt, and ſent him to his lodgings, under the care of the other French gentleman and his own companion; they being alſo accompanied by Mr. Jolter, who having formerly ſeen all the curioſities of Liſle, willingly urrendered his place to the phyſician.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

Pickle *engages with a knight of* Malta, *in a converſation upon the* Engliſh *ſtage, which is followed by a diſſertation on the theatres of the ancients, by the doctor.*

THE reſt of the company proceeded to the arſenal, which having viewed, together with ſome remarkable churches, they, in their return, went to the comedy, and ſaw the Cid of Corneille tolerably well repreſented. In conſequence of this entertainment, the diſcourſe at ſupper turned upon dramatic preformances; and all the objections of Monſ. de Scudery to the piece they had ſeen acted, together with the deciſion of the French academy, were canvaſſed and diſcuſſed. The knight was a man of letters and taſte, and particularly well acquainted with the ſtate of the Engliſh ſtage; ſo that when the painter boldly pronounced ſentence againſt the French manner of acting, on the ſtrength of having frequented a Covent-Garden club of criticks, and been often admitted, by virtue of an order, into the pit; a compariſon immediately enſued, not between the authors, but the actors of both nations, to whom the chevalier and Peregrine were no ſtrangers. Our hero, like a good Engliſhman, made no ſcruple of giving the preference to the performers of his own country, who, he alledged, obeyed the genuine impulſes of nature, in exhibiting the paſſions of the human mind; and entered ſo warmly into the ſpirit of their ſeveral parts, that they often fancied themſelves the very heroes they repreſented. Whereas,

the action of the Pariſian players, even in their moſt intereſting characters, was generally ſuch an extravagance in voice and geſture, as is no where to be obſerved but on the ſtage. To illuſtrate this aſſertion, he availed himſelf of his talent, and mimicked the manner and voice of all the principal performers, male and female, belonging to the French comedy, to the admiration of the chevalier, who having complimented him upon this ſurpriſing modulation, begged leave to diſſent in ſome particulars from the opinion he had avowed. "That you have good actors in England, (ſaid he) it would be unjuſt and abſurd in me to deny; your theatre is adorned by one woman, whoſe ſenſibility and ſweetneſs of voice is ſuch as I have never obſerved on any other ſtage; ſhe has, beſides, an elegance of perſon and expreſſion of features, that wonderfully adapt her for the moſt engaging characters of your beſt plays; and I muſt freely own that I have been as highly delighted and as deeply affected, by a Monimia and Belvidera at London, as ever I was by a Cornelia and Cleopatra at Paris. Your favourite actor is a ſurpriſing genius. You can, moreover, boaſt of ſeveral comic actors who are perfect maſters of buffoonery and grimace; though, to be free with you, I think, in theſe qualifications you are excelled by the players of Amſterdam. Yet one of your gracioſo's I cannot admire, in all the characters he aſſumes. His utterance is a continual ſing ſong, like the chanting of veſpers, and his action reſembles that of heaving ballaſt into the hold of a ſhip. In his outward deportment, he ſeems to have confounded the ideas of dignity and inſolence of mien, acts the crafty, cool, deſigning Crookback, as a loud, ſhallow,

ſhallow, bluſtering Hector; in the character of the mild patriot Brutus, loſes all temper and decorum; nay, ſo ridiculous is the behaviour of him and Caſſius at their interview, that ſetting foot to foot, and grinning at each other, with the aſpect of two coblers enraged, they thruſt their left ſides together, with repeated ſhocks, that the hilts of their ſwords may claſh for the entertainment of the audience; as if they were a couple of Merry Andrews, endeavouring to raiſe the laugh of the vulgar, on ſome ſcaffold at Bartholomew Fair. The deſpair of a great man who falls a ſacrifice to the infernal practices of a ſubtle traitor, that enjoyed his confidence, this Engliſh Æſopus repreſents, by beating his own forehead, and bellowing like a bull; and indeed, in almoſt all his moſt intereſting ſcenes, performs ſuch ſtrange ſhakings of the head, and other antic geſticulations, that when I firſt ſaw him act, I imagined the poor man laboured under that paralitical diſorder, which is known by the name of St. Vitus's dance. In ſhort, he ſeems to be a ſtranger to the more refined ſenſations of the ſoul, conſequently his expreſſion is of the vulgar kind, and he muſt often ſink under the idea of the poet; ſo that he has recourſe to ſuch violence of affected agitation, as impoſes upon the undiſcerning ſpectator, but to the eye of taſte, evinces him a meer player of that claſs whom your admired Shakeſpear juſtly compares to nature's journeyman tearing a paſſion to rags. Yet this man, in ſpite of all theſe abſurdities, is an admirable Falſtaff, exhibits the character of the eighth Henry to the life, is reaſonably applauded in the Plain Dealer, excels in the part of Sir John Brute, and would be equal to many humorous

morous ſituations in low comedy, which his pride will not allow him to undertake. I ſhould not have been ſo ſevere upon this actor, had I not ſeen him extolled by his partizans, with the moſt ridiculous and fulſome manifeſtation of praiſe, even in thoſe very circumſtances wherein (as I have obſerved) he chiefly failed."

Pickle, not a little piqued to hear the qualifications of ſuch a celebrated actor in England treated with ſuch freedom and diſreſpect, anſwered with ſome aſperity, that the chevalier was a true critick, more induſtrious in obſerving the blemiſhes than in acknowledging the excellence of thoſe who fell under his examination.

It was not to be ſuppoſed that one actor could ſhine equally in all characters; and though his obſervations were undoubtedly very judicious, he himſelf could not help wondering that ſome of them had always eſcaped his notice, though he had been an aſſiduous frequenter of the playhouſe. "The player in queſtion, ſaid he, has, in your own opinion, conſiderable ſhare of merit in the characters of comic life; and as to the manners of the great perſonages in tragedy, and the operation of the grand paſſions of the ſoul, I apprehend, they may be variouſly repreſented, according to the various complexion and cultivation of different men. A Spaniard, for example, though impelled by the ſame paſſion, will expreſs it very differently from a Frenchman; and what is looked upon as graceful vivacity and addreſs by the one, would be conſidered as impertinence and foppery by the other: nay, ſo oppoſite is your common deportment from that of ſome other nations, that one of your own countrymen, in the relation of his travels obſerves, that the Perſians

even

even of this age, when they ſee any man perform unneceſſary geſtures, ſay he is either a fool or Frenchman. The ſtandard of demeanour being thus unſettled, a Turk, a Moor, an Indian, or inhabitant of any country, whoſe cuſtoms and dreſs are widely different from ours, may, in his ſentiments, poſſeſs all the dignity of the human heart, and be inſpired by the nobleſt paſſion that animates the ſoul, and yet excite the laughter rather then the reſpect of an European ſpectator.

When I firſt beheld your famous Pariſian ſtage-heroine, in one of her principal parts, her attitudes ſeemed ſo violent, and ſhe toſſed her arms around with ſuch extravagance, that ſhe put me in mind of a wind-mill under the agitation of a hard gale; while her voice and features exhibited the lively repreſentation of an Engliſh ſcold. The action of your favourite male-performer was, in my opinion, equally unnatural; he appeared with the affected airs of a dancing-maſter; at the moſt pathetic junctures of his fate, he lifted up his hands above his head, like a tumbler going to vault, and ſpoke as if his throat had been obſtructed by an hair-bruſh; yet, when I compared their manners with thoſe of the people before whom they performed, and made allowance for that exaggeration which obtains on all theatres, I was inſenſibly reconciled to their method of performance, and could diſtinguiſh abundance of merit beneath that oddity of appearance."

The chevalier perceiving Peregrine a little irritated at what he had ſaid, aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken, in cenſuring the Engliſh players, aſſuring him that he had an infinite veneration for the Britiſh learning, genius and taſte, which were ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed in the world of letters;

letters; and that notwithſtanding the ſeverity of his criticiſm, he thought the theatre of London much better ſupplied with actors than that of Paris. The young gentleman thanked him for his polite condeſcenſion, at which Pallet exulted, ſaying with a ſhake of the head, "I believe ſo too, Monſieur;" and the phyſician, impatient of the diſpute in which he had bore no ſhare, obſerved with a ſupercilious air, that the modern ſtage was altogether beneath the notice of one who had an idea of ancient magnificence and execution; that plays ought to be exhibited at the expence of the ſtate, as thoſe of Sophocles were by the Athenians; and that proper judges ſhould be appointed for receiving or rejecting all ſuch performances as are offered to the public.

He then deſcribed the theatre at Rome, which contained eighty thouſand ſpectators, gave them a learned diſquiſition into the nature of the Perſona, or maſk, worn by the Roman actors, which, he ſaid, was a machine that covered the whole head, furniſhed on the inſide with a brazen concavity, that by reverberating the ſound as it iſſued from the mouth, raiſed the voice, ſo as to render it audible to ſuch an extended audience. He explained the difference between the Saltator and Declamator, one of whom acted, while the other rehearſed the part; and from thence took occaſion to mention the perfection of their pantomimes, who were ſo amazingly diſtinct in the exerciſe of their art, that a certain prince of Pontus being at the court of Nero, and ſeeing one of them repreſent a ſtory, begged him of the emperor, in order to employ him as an interpreter among barbarous nations, whoſe language he did not underſtand. Nay, divers cynic philoſophers,

who had condemned this entertainment unſeen, when they chanced to be eye-witneſſes of their admirable dexterity, expreſſed their ſorrow for having ſo long debarred themſelves of ſuch rational enjoyment.

He diſſented, however, from the opinion of Peregrine, who, as a proof of their excellence, had advanced, that ſome of the Engliſh actors fancied themſelves the very thing they repreſented, and recounted a ſtory from Lucian, of a certain celebrated pantomime, who, in acting the part of Ajax in his frenzy, was tranſported into a real fit of delirium, during which he tore to pieces the cloaths of that actor who ſtalked before him, beating the ſtage with iron ſhoes, in order to increaſe the noiſe, ſnatched an inſtrument from one of the muſicians, and broke it over the head of him who repreſented Ulyſſes; and running to the conſular bench, miſtook a couple of ſenators for the ſheep which were to be ſlain. The audience applauded him to the ſkies; but ſo conſcious was the mimic of his own extravagance, when he recovered the uſe of his reaſon, that he actually fell ſick with mortification; and being afterwards deſired to re-act the piece, flatly refuſed to appear in any ſuch character, ſaying, that the ſhorteſt follies were the beſt, and that it was ſufficient for him to have been a madman once in his life.

CHAP.

CHAP. LII.

An adventure happens to Pipes, *in conſequence of which he is diſmiſſed from* Peregrine's *ſervice. The whole company ſet out for* Ghent *in the* Diligence. *Our hero is captivated by a lady in that carriage; intereſts her ſpiritual director in his behalf.*

THE doctor being fairly engaged on the ſubject of the ancients, would have proceeded the Lord knows how far, without heſitation, had not he been interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Jolter, who in great confuſion told them, that Pipes having affronted a ſoldier, was then ſurrounded in the ſtreet, and would certainly be put to death, if ſome perſon of authority did not immediately interpoſe in his behalf.

Peregrine no ſooner learned the danger of his truſty ſquire, than ſnatching up his ſword, he ran down ſtairs, and was followed by the Chevalier, intreating him to leave the affair to his management. Within ten yards of the door they found Tom with his back to a wall, defended himſelf manfully with a mopſtick againſt the aſſault of three or four ſoldiers, who at ſight of the Malteſe croſs deſiſted from the attack, and were taken into cuſtody by order of the knight. One of the aggreſſors, being an Iriſhman, begged to be heard with great importunity, before he ſhould be ſent to the guard; and by the mediation of Pickle, was accordingly brought into the Hotel, with his companions, all three bearing upon their heads and faces evident marks of their adverſary's proweſs and dexterity. The ſpokeſman being

being confronted with Pipes, informed the company, that having by accident met with Mr. Pipes, whom he conſidered as his countryman, though fortune had diſpoſed of them in different ſervices, he invited him to drink a glaſs of wine; and accordingly carried him to a Cabaret, where he introduced him to his comrades; but in the courſe of the converſation, which turned upon the power and greatneſs of the kings of France and England, Mr. Pipes had been pleaſed to treat his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty with great diſreſpect; and when he (the entertainer) expoſtulated with him in a friendly manner about his impolite behaviour, obſerving, that he being in the French ſervice, would be under the neceſſity of reſenting his abuſe, if he did not put a ſtop to it before the other gentlemen of the cloth ſhould comprehend his meaning, he had ſet them all three at defiance, diſhonoured him in particular with the opprobrious epithet of *rebel to his native king and country*, and even drank (in broken French) to the perdition of Lewis and all his adherents! that, compelled by this outrageous conduct, he, as the perſon who had recommended him to their ſociety, had, in vindication of his own character, demanded ſatisfaction of the delinquent, who on pretence of fetching a ſword, had gone to his lodging, from whence he all of a ſudden ſallied upon them with the mopſtick, which he employed in the annoyance of them all without diſtinction, ſo that they were obliged to draw in their own defence.

Pipes being queſtioned by his maſter, with regard to the truth of this account, owned that every circumſtance was juſtly repreſented; ſaying, he did not value their cheeſe-toaſters a pinch of

of oakum; and that if the gentleman had not ſhot in betwixt them, he would have trimmed them to ſuch a tune, that they ſhould not have had a whole yard to ſquare. Peregrine reprimanded him ſharply for his unmannerly behaviour, and inſiſted upon his aſking pardon of thoſe he had injured, upon the ſpot. But no conſideration was efficacious enough to produce ſuch conceſſion; to this command he was both deaf and dumb, and the repeated threats of his maſter had no more effect than if they had been addreſſed to a marble ſtatue. At length our hero, incenſed at his obſtinacy, ſtarted up, and would have chaſtiſed him with manual operation, had not he been prevented by the Chevalier, who found means to moderate his indignation ſo far, that he contented himſelf with diſmiſſing the offender from his ſervice; and after having obtained the diſcharge of the priſoners, gave them a Louis to drink, by way of recompence for the diſgrace and damage they had ſuſtained.

The knight perceiving our young gentleman very much ruffled at this accident, and reflecting upon the extraordinary deportment and appearance of his valet, whoſe hair had by this time adopted a grizzled hue, imagined he was ſome favourite domeſtic, who had grown grey in the ſervice of his maſter's family, and that, of conſequence, he was uneaſy at the ſacrifice he had made. Swayed by this conjecture, he earneſtly ſolicited in his behalf; but all he could obtain, was a promiſe of re-admitting him into favour on the terms already propoſed, or at leaſt on condition that he ſhould make his acknowledgment to the Chevalier, for his want of reverence and reſpect for the French monarch.

Upon

Upon this condeſcenſion, the culprit was called up ſtairs, and made acquainted with the mitigation of his fate; upon which he ſaid, he would down on his marrow-bones to his own maſter, but would be damn'd before he would aſk pardon of e'er a Frenchman in Chriſtendom. Pickle, exaſperated at this blunt declaration, ordered him out of his preſence, and charged him never to appear before his face again; while the officer in vain employed all his influence and addreſs to appeaſe his reſentment, and about midnight took his leave with marks of mortification at his want of ſucceſs.

Next day the company agreed to travel thro' Flanders in the Diligence, by the advice of Peregrine, who was not without hope of meeting with ſome adventure or amuſement in that carriage; and Jolter took care to ſecure places for them all. It being reſolved that the valet de chambre and the doctor's man ſhould attend the vehicle on horſeback; and as for the forlorn Pipes, he was left to reap the fruits of his own ſtubborn diſpoſition, notwithſtanding the united efforts of the whole triumvirate, who endeavoured to procure his pardon.

Every previous meaſure being thus taken, they ſet out from Liſle about ſix in the morning, and found themſelves in the company of a female adventurer, a very handſome young lady, a Capuchin, and a Rotterdam Jew. Our young gentleman being the firſt of this ſociety that entered, ſurveyed the ſtrangers with an attentive eye, and ſeated himſelf immediately behind the beautiful unknown, who at once attracted his attention. Pallet ſeeing another lady unengaged, in imitation of his friend, took poſſeſſion of her neighbourhood;

bourhood; the phyſician paired with the prieſt, and Jolter ſat down by the Jew.

The machine had not proceeded many furlongs, when Pickle accoſting the fair incognita, congratulated himſelf upon his happineſs, in being the fellow-traveller of ſo charming a lady. She, without the leaſt reſerve or affectation, thanked him for his compliment, and replied with a ſprightly air, that now they were embarked in one common bottom, they muſt club their endeavours to make one another as happy as the nature of their ſituation would permit them to be. Encouraged by this frank intimation, and captivated by her fine black eyes and eaſy behaviour, he attached himſelf to her from that moment; and in a little time the converſation became ſo particular, that the Capuchin thought proper to interfere in the diſcourſe, in ſuch a manner as gave the youth to underſtand, that he was there on purpoſe to ſuperintend her conduct. He was doubly rejoiced at this diſcovery, in conſequence of which he hoped to profit in his addreſſes, not only by the young lady's reſtraint, that never fails to operate in behalf of the lover, but alſo by the corruptibility of her guardian, whom he did not doubt of rendering propitious to his cauſe. Fluſhed with theſe expectations, he behaved with uncommon complacency to the father, who was charmed with the affability of his carriage, and on the faith of his generoſity abated of his vigilance ſo much, that our hero carried on his ſuit without further moleſtation; while the painter, in ſigns and loud burſts of laughter, converſed with his Dulcinea, who was perfectly well verſed in theſe ſimple expreſſions

of

of ſatisfaction, and had already found means to make a dangerous invaſion upon his heart.

Nor were the governor and phyſician unemployed, while their friends intereſted themſelves in this agreeable manner. Jolter no ſooner perceived the Hollander was a Jew, than he entered into an inveſtigation of the Hebrew tongue, in which he was a connoiſſeur; and the doctor at the ſame time attacked the Mendicant on the ridiculous maxims of his order, together with the impoſitions of prieſt-craft in general, which (he obſerved) prevail ſo much among thoſe who profeſs the Roman Catholic religion.

Thus coupled, each committee enjoyed their own converſation apart, without any danger of encroachment; and all were ſo intent upon their ſeveral topics, that they ſcarce allowed themſelves a ſmall interval in viewing the deſolation of Menin, as they paſſed through that ruined frontier. About twelve o'clock they arrived at Courtray, where the horſes are always changed, and the company halt an hour for refreſhment. Here Peregrine handed his charmer into an apartment, where ſhe was joined by the other lady; and on pretence of ſeeing ſome of the churches in town, put himſelf under the direction of the Capuchin, from whom he learned that the young lady was wife to a French gentleman, to whom ſhe had been married about a year, and that ſhe was now on her journey to viſit her mother, who lived in Bruſſels, and who at that time laboured under a lingering diſtemper, which, in all probability, would ſoon put a period to her life He then launched out in praiſe of her daughter's virtue and conjugal affection; and laſtly told him, that he was her father confeſſor, and pitched upon to

be her conductor through Flanders, by her husband, who, as well as his wife, placed the utmoſt confidence in his prudence and integrity.

Pickle eaſily comprehended the meaning of this inſinuation, and took the hint accordingly. He tickled the prieſt's vanity with extraordinary encomiums upon the diſintereſted principles of his order, which were detached from all worldly purſuits, and altogether devoted to the eternal ſalvation of mankind. He applauded their patience, humility and learning, and laviſhed a world of praiſe upon their talent in preaching, which (he ſaid) had more than once operated ſo powerfully upon him, that had he not been reſtrained by certain conſiderations which he could not poſſibly wave, he ſhould have embraced their tenets, and begged admiſſion into their fraternity: but, as the circumſtances of his fate would not permit him to take ſuch a ſalutary meaſure for the preſent, he intreated the good father to accept a ſmall token of his love and reſpect, for the benefit of that convent to which he belonged. So ſaying, he pulled out a purſe of ten guineas, which the Capuchin obſerving, turned his head another way, and lifting up his arm, diſplayed a pocket almoſt as high as his collar-bone, in which he depoſited the money.

This proof of affection for the order produced a ſudden and ſurpriſing effect upon the friar. In the tranſport of his zeal he wrung this ſemi-convert's hand, ſhowered a thouſand benedictions upon his head, and exhorted him with the tears flowing from his eyes, to perfect the great work which the finger of God had begun in his heart; and as an inſtance of his concern for the welfare of his precious ſoul, the holy brother promiſed to re-

recommend him ſtrenuouſly to the pious admonitions of the young woman under his care, who was a perfect ſaint upon earth, and endued with the peculiar gift of mollifying the hearts of obdurate ſinners. "O father! (cried the hypocritical projector, who by this time perceived that his money was not thrown away) if I could be favoured but for one half hour with the private inſtruction of that inſpired devotee, my mind preſages, that I ſhould be a ſtray'd ſheep brought back into the fold, and that I ſhould find eaſy entrance at the gates of heaven! There is ſomething ſupernatural in her aſpect; I gaze upon her with the moſt pious fervor, and my whole ſoul is agitated with tumults of hope and deſpair!" Having pronounced this rhapſody with tranſport half natural and half affected, the prieſt aſſured him, that theſe were operations of the ſpirit, which muſt not be repreſſed; and comforted him with the hope of enjoying the bleſſed interview which he deſired, proteſting, that as far as his influence extended, his wiſh ſhould be that very evening indulged. The gracious pupil thanked him for his benevolent concern, which he ſwore ſhould not be ſquandered upon an ungrateful object; and the reſt of the company interrupting the converſation, they returned in a body to the inn, where they dined all together; and the ladies were perſuaded to be our hero's gueſts.

As the ſubjects on which they had been engaged before dinner were not exhauſted, each brace reſumed their former theme, when they were replaced in the Diligence. The painter's miſtreſs finiſhed her conqueſt, by exerting her ſkill in the art of ogling, accompanied by frequent bewitching ſighs, and ſome tender French

ſongs

ſongs that ſhe ſung with ſuch pathetic expreſſion, as quite melted the reſolution of Pallet, and utterly ſubdued his affection: and he, to convince her of the importance of her victory, gave a ſpecimen of his own talents, by entertaining her with that celebrated Engliſh ditty, the burthen of which begins with, *The pigs they lie with their arſes bare.*

CHAP. LIII.

He makes ſome progreſs in her affections; is interrupted by a diſpute between Jolter *and a* Jew; *appeaſes the wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an interview with his fair enſlaver, in which he finds himſelf deceived.*

PEregrine, mean while, employed all his inſinuation and addreſs in practiſing upon the heart of the Capuchin's fair charge. He had long ago declared his paſſion, not in the ſuperficial manner of a French gallant, but with all the ardor of an enthuſiaſt. He had languiſhed, vowed, flattered, kiſs'd her hand by ſtealth, and had no reaſon to complain of his reception. Though by a man of a leſs ſanguine diſpoſition, her particular complaiſance would have been deemed equivocal, and perhaps nothing more than the effect of French breeding and conſtitutional vivacity; he gave his own qualifications credit for the whole, and with theſe ſentiments carried on the attack with ſuch unabating vigour, that ſhe was actually prevailed upon to accept a ring, which he preſented as a token of his eſteem; and every thing proceeded in a moſt proſperous train, when they were diſturbed by the governor and

Iſ-

Iſraelite, who in the heat of diſputation raiſed their voices, and poured forth ſuch effuſions of gutturals, as ſet our lover's teeth on edge. As they ſpoke in a language unknown to every one in the carriage but themſelves, and looked at each other with mutual animoſity and rancour, Peregrine deſired to know the cauſe of their contention. Upon which, Jolter exclaimed in a furious tone, "This learned Levite, forſooth, has the impudence to tell me, that I don't underſtand Hebrew; and affirms, that the word *Benoni* ſignifies *child of joy*; whereas I can prove, and indeed have already ſaid enough to convince any reaſonable man, that in the Septuagint it is rightly tranſlated into *ſon of my ſorrow.*" Having thus explained himſelf to his pupil, he turned to the prieſt, with intention to appeal to his determination; but the Jew pulled him by the ſleeve with great eagerneſs, ſaying, "For the love of God be quiet, the Capuchin will diſcover who we are!" Jolter, offended at this conjunction, ecchoed "Who we are!" with great emphaſis; and repeating *nos poma natamus*, aſked ironically, to which of the Tribes the Jew thought he belonged? The Levite affronted at his comparing him to a ball of horſe-dung, replied with a moſt ſignificant grin, "To the tribe of Iſſachar." His antagoniſt, taking the advantage of his unwillingneſs to be known by the friar, and prompted by revenge for the freedom he had uſed, anſwered in the French language, that the judgment of God was ſtill manifeſt upon their whole race, not only in their being in the ſtate of exiles from their native land, but alſo in the ſpite of their hearts and pravity of their diſpoſitions, which demonſtrate them to be the genuine off-

ſpring of thoſe who crucified the Saviour of the world.

His expectation was, however, defeated; the prieſt himſelf was too deeply engaged, to attend to the debates of other people. The phyſician, in the pride and inſolence of his learning, had undertaken to diſplay the abſurdity of the Chriſtian faith; having already (as he thought) confuted the Capuchin, touching the points of belief in which the Roman Catholics differ from the reſt of the world. But not contented with the imagined victory he had gained, he began to ſtrike at the fundamentals of religion; and the father, with incredible forbearance, ſuffered him to make very free with the doctrine of the Trinity: but, when he levelled the ſhafts of his ridicule at the immaculate conception of the Bleſſed Virgin, the good man's patience forſook him, his eyes ſeemed to kindle with indignation, he trembled in every joint, and uttered with a loud voice, "You are an abominable—I will not call thee heretic, for thou art worſe (if poſſible) than a Jew; you deſerve to be incloſed in a furnace ſeven times heated, and I have a good mind to lodge an information againſt you with the governor of Ghent, that you may be apprehended and puniſhed as an impious blaſphemer."

This menace operated like a charm upon all preſent. The doctor was confounded, the governor diſmayed, the Levite's teeth chattered, the painter was aſtoniſhed at the general confuſion, the cauſe of which he could not comprehend; and Pickle himſelf, not a little alarmed, was obliged to uſe all his intereſt and aſſiduity in appeaſing this ſon of the church, who at length, in conſideration of the friendſhip he profeſſed

ſeſſed for the young gentleman, conſented to forgive what had paſſed, but abſolutely refuſed to ſit in contact with ſuch a profane wretch, whom he looked upon as a fiend of darkneſs, ſent by the enemy of mankind to poiſon the minds of weak people; ſo that, after having croſſed himſelf, and muttered certain exorciſms, he inſiſted upon the doctor's changing places with the Jew, who approached the offended eccleſiaſtic in an agony of fear.

Matters being thus compromiſed, the converſation flowed in a more general channel; and without the intervention of any other accident, or bone of contention, the carriage arrived at the city of Ghent about ſeven in the evening. Supper being beſpoke for the whole company, our adventurer and his friends went out to take a ſuperficial view of the place, leaving his new miſtreſs to the pious exhortations of her confeſſor, whom (as we have already obſerved) he had ſecured in his intereſt. This zealous mediator ſpoke ſo warmly in his commendation, and intereſted her conſcience ſo much in the affair, that ſhe could not refuſe her helping hand to the great work of his converſion, and promiſed to grant the interview he deſired.

This agreeable piece of intelligence, which the Capuchin communicated to Peregrine at his return, elevated his ſpirits to ſuch a degree, that he ſhone at ſupper with uncommon brilliance, in a thouſand ſallies of wit and pleaſantry, to the admiration and delight of all preſent, eſpecially of his fair Fleming, who ſeemed quite captivated by his perſon and behaviour.

The evening being thus ſpent to the ſatisfaction of all parties, the company broke up, and

retired to their ſeveral apartments, when our lover, to his unſpeakable mortification, learned that the two ladies were obliged to lie in the ſame room, all the other chambers of the inn being preoccupied. When he imparted this difficulty to the prieſt, that charitable father, who was very fruitful in expedients, aſſured him, that his ſpiritual concerns ſhould not be obſtructed by ſuch a ſlender impediment; and accordingly availed himſelf of his prerogative, by going in to his daughter's chamber when ſhe was almoſt undreſſed, and leading her into his own, on pretence of adminiſtring ſalutary food for her ſoul. Having brought the two votaries together, he prayed for ſucceſs to the operations of grace, and left them to their mutual meditations, after having conjured them in the moſt ſolemn manner to let no impure ſentiments, or temptations of the fleſh, interfere with the hallowed deſign of their meeting.

The reverend interceſſor being gone, and the door faſtned on the inſide, the pſeudo-convert, tranſported with his paſſion, threw himſelf at his Amanda's feet; and begging ſhe would ſpare him the tedious form of addreſſes, which the nature of their interview would not permit him to obſerve, began with all the impetuoſity of love to make the moſt by the occaſion. But whether ſhe was diſpleaſed by the intrepidity and aſſurance of his behaviour, thinking herſelf intitled to more courtſhip and reſpect, or was really better fortified with chaſtity than he or his procurer had ſuppoſed her to be; certain it is, ſhe expreſſed reſentment and ſurprize at his boldneſs and preſumption, and upbraided him with having impoſed upon the charity of the friar. The

young gentleman was really as much aſtoniſhed at this rebuff, as ſhe pretended to be at his declaration, and earneſtly entreated her to conſider how precious the moments were, and for once ſacrifice ſuperfluous ceremony, to the happineſs of one who adored her with ſuch a flame, as could not fail to conſume his vitals, if ſhe would not deign to bleſs him with her favour. Notwithſtanding all his tears, vows and ſupplications, his perſonal accompliſhments and the tempting opportunity, all that he could obtain, was an acknowledgment of his having made an impreſſion upon her heart, which ſhe hoped the dictates of her duty would enable her to eraſe. This confeſſion he conſidered as a delicate conſent; and obeying the impulſe of his love, ſnatched her up in his arms, with an intention of ſeizing that which ſhe declined to give; when this French Lucretia, unable to defend her virtue any other way, ſcreamed aloud; and the Capuchin, ſetting his ſhoulder to the door, forced it open, and entered in an affected extaſy of amazement. He lifted up his hands and eyes, and pretended to be thunderſtruck at the diſcovery he had made; then, in broken exclamations, profeſſed his horror at the wicked intention of our hero, who had covered ſuch a damnable ſcheme with the maſk of religion.

In ſhort, he performed his cue with ſuch dexterity, that the lady believing him in earneſt, begg'd he would forgive the ſtranger, on account of his youth and education, which had been tainted by the errors of hereſy; and he was on theſe conſiderations content to accept the ſubmiſſion of our hero, who, far from renouncing his expectations, notwithſtanding this mortifying

repulſe, confided ſo much in his own talents, and the confeſſion which his miſtreſs had made, that he reſolved to make another effort, to which nothing could have prompted him but the utmoſt turbulence of unruly deſire.

CHAP. LIV.

He makes another effort towards the accompliſhment of his wiſh, which is poſtponed by a ſtrange accident.

HE directed his valet de chambre, who was a thorough-paced pimp, to kindle ſome ſtraw in the yard, and then paſs by the door of her apartment, crying with a loud voice that the houſe was on fire. This alarm brought both ladies out of their chambers in a moment, and Peregrine taking the advantage of their running to the ſtreet door, entered the room and concealed himſelf under a large table that ſtood in an unobſerved corner. The nymphs, as ſoon as they underſtood the cauſe of his Mercury's ſuppoſed affright, returned to their apartment, and having ſaid their prayers, undreſſed themſelves and went to bed. This ſcene, which fell under the obſervation of Pickle, did not at all contribute to the cooling of his concupiſcence, but on the contrary, inflamed him to ſuch a degree, that he could ſcarce reſtrain his impatience, until by her breathing deep, he concluded the fellow-lodger of his Amanda was aſleep. This welcome note no ſooner ſaluted his ears, than he

he crept to his charmer's bed-ſide, and placing himſelf on his knees, gently laid hold on her white hand, and preſſed it to his lips. She had juſt begun to cloſe her eyes, and enjoy the agreeable oppreſſion of ſlumber, when ſhe was rouſed by this rape, at which ſhe ſtarted pronouncing in a tone of ſurprize and diſmay, "My God! who's that?" The lover, with the moſt inſinuating humility, beſought her to hear him; vowing that his intention in approaching her thus, was not to violate the laws of decency, or that indelible eſteem which ſhe had engraven on his heart; but to manifeſt his ſorrow and contrition for the umbrage he had given, to pour forth the overflowings of his ſoul, and tell her that he neither could nor would ſurvive her diſpleaſure. Theſe and many more pathetic proteſtations, accompanied with ſighs and tears, and other expreſſions of grief, which our hero had at command, could not fail to melt the tender heart of the amiable Fleming, already prepoſſeſſed in favour of his qualifications. She ſympathized ſo much with his affliction, as to weep in her turn, when ſhe repreſented the impoſſibility of her rewarding his paſſion; and he ſeizing the favourable moment, reinforced his ſollicitations with ſuch irreſiſtible tranſports, that her reſolution gave way, ſhe began to breathe quick, expreſſed her fear of being overheard by the other lady, and with an ejaculation of "O heavens! I'm undone:" ſuffered him, after a faint ſtruggle, to make a lodgment upon the covered way of her bed. Her honour however was ſecured for the preſent, by a ſtrange ſort of knocking upon the wainſcot, at the other end of the room, hard by the bed in which the female adventurer lay.

Surpriſed at this circumſtance, the lady begged him for heaven's ſake to retreat, or her reputation would be ruined for ever: but when he repreſented to her, that her character would run a much greater riſk, if he ſhould be detected in withdrawing, ſhe conſented with great trepidation to his ſtay, and they liſtened in ſilence to the ſequel of the noiſe that alarmed them. This was no other than an expedient of the painter, to awaken his Dulcinea, with whom he had made an aſſignation, or at leaſt interchanged ſuch ſignals as he thought amounted to a firm appointment. His nymph being diſturbed in her firſt ſleep, immediately underſtood the ſound, and true to the agreement, roſe, and unbolting the door as ſoftly as poſſible, gave him admittance, leaving it open for his more commodious retreat.

While this happy gallant was employed in diſengaging himſelf from the diſhabille in which he had entered, the Capuchin ſuſpecting that Peregrine would make another attempt upon his charge, had crept ſilently to the apartment, in order to reconnoitre, leaſt the adventure ſhould be atchieved without his knowledge; a circumſtance that would deprive him of the profits he might expect from his privity and concurrence. Finding the door unlatched, his ſuſpicion was confirmed, and he made no ſcruple of creeping into the chamber on all four; ſo that the painter having ſtript himſelf to the ſhirt, in groping about for his Dulcinea's bed, chanced to lay his hand upon the ſhaven crown of the father's head, which by a circular motion, the prieſt began to turn round in his graſp, like a ball in a ſocket, to the ſurpriſe and conſternation of poor Pallet, who having neither penetration to comprehend the caſe,

nor

nor reſolution to withdraw his fingers from this ſtrange object of his touch, ſtood ſweating in the dark, and venting ejaculations with great devotion. The friar tired with this exerciſe, and the painful poſture in which he ſtooped, raiſed himſelf gradually upon his feet, heaving up at the ſame time the hand of the painter, whoſe terror and amazement increaſed to ſuch a degree at this unaccountable elevation, that his faculties began to fail; and his palm in the confuſion of his fright ſliding over the prieſt's forehead, one of his fingers happened to ſlip into his mouth, and was immediately ſecured between the Capuchin's teeth, with as firm a fixture as if it had been ſcrewed in a blackſmith's vice. The painter was ſo much diſordered by this ſudden ſnap, which tortured him to the bone, that forgetting all other conſiderations, he roared aloud, "Murder! fire! a trap, a trap! help, chriſtians, for the love of God help." Our hero confounded by theſe exclamations, which he knew would ſoon fill the room with ſpectators, and incenſed at his own mortifying diſappointment, was obliged to quit the untaſted banquet, and approaching the cauſe of his misfortune, juſt as his tormentor had thought proper to releaſe his finger, diſcharged ſuch a hearty ſlap between his ſhoulders, as brought him to the ground with hideous bellowing, then retiring unperceived, to his own chamber, was one of the firſt who returned with a light, on pretence of having been alarmed with his cries. The Capuchin had taken the ſame precaution, and followed Peregrine into the room, pronouncing *Benedicite*, and croſſing himſelf with many marks of aſtoniſhment. The phyſician and Jolter appearing at the ſame time, the unfortunate pain-

ter was found lying naked on the floor, in all the agony of horror and diſmay, blowing upon his left hand, that hung dangling from the elbow. The circumſtance of his being found in that apartment, and the attitude of his affliction, which was extremely ridiculous, provoked the doctor to a ſmile, and produced a ſmall relaxation in the ſeverity of the governor's countenance; while Pickle teſtifying ſurprize and concern, lifted him from the ground, and enquired into the cauſe of his preſent ſituation. Having, after ſome recollection, and fruitleſs endeavours to ſpeak, recovered the uſe of his tongue, he told them that the houſe was certainly haunted by evil ſpirits, by which he had been conveyed (he knew not how) into that apartment, and afflicted with all the tortures of hell: that one of them had made itſelf ſenſible to his feeling, in the ſhape of a round ball of ſmooth fleſh, which turned round under his hand, like an aſtronomer's globe, and then riſing up to a ſurpriſing height, was converted into a machine that laid hold on his finger, by a ſnap, and having pinned him to the ſpot, he continued for ſome moments in unſpeakable agony. At laſt he ſaid the engine ſeemed to melt away from his finger, and he received a ſudden thwack upon his ſhoulders, as if diſcharged by the arm of a giant, which overthrew him in an inſtant upon the floor. The prieſt hearing this ſtrange account, pulled out of one of his pouches a piece of conſecrated candle, which he lighted immediately, and muttered certain myſterious conjurations. Jolter, imagining that Pallet was drunk, ſhook his head, ſaying, he believed the ſpirit was no where but in his own brain. The phyſician, for once, condeſcended

ſcended to be a wag, and looking towards one of the beds, obſerved, that in his opinion, the painter had been miſled by the fleſh, and not by the ſpirit. The fair Fleming lay in ſilent aſtoniſhment and affright; and her fellow-lodger, in order to acquit herſelf of all ſuſpicion, exclaimed with incredible volubility againſt the author of this uproar, who (ſhe did not doubt) had concealed himſelf in the apartment with a view of perpetrating ſome wicked attempt upon her precious virtue, and was puniſhed and prevented by the immediate interpoſition of heaven. At her deſire, therefore, and at the earneſt ſolicitation of the other lady, he was conducted to his own bed, and the chamber being evacuated, they locked their door, fully reſolved to admit no more viſitants for that night: while Peregrine, mad with ſeeing the delicious morſel, ſnatched (as it were) from his very lip, ſtalked through the paſſage, like a ghoſt, in hope of finding ſome opportunity of re-entering, till the day beginning to break, he was obliged to retire, curſing the ideotical conduct of the painter, which had ſo unluckily interfered with his delight.

CHAP. LV.

They depart from Ghent. *Our hero engages in a political diſpute with his miſtreſs, whom he offends, and pacifies with ſubmiſſion. He practiſes an expedient to detain the carriage at* Aloſt, *and confirms the prieſt in his intereſt.*

NEXT day, about one o'clock, after having ſeen every thing remarkable in town, and been preſent at the execution of two youths, who were hanged for raviſhing a whore, they took their departure from Ghent, in the ſame carriage which had brought them thither; and the converſation turning upon the puniſhment they had ſeen inflicted, the Flemiſh beauty expreſſed great ſympathy and compaſſion for the unhappy ſufferers, who (as ſhe had been informed) had fallen victims to the malice of the accuſer. Her ſentiments were eſpouſed by all the company, except the French lady of pleaſure, who, thinking the credit of the ſiſterhood concerned in the affair, bitterly inveighed againſt the profligacy of the age, and particularly the baſe and villainous attempts of man upon the chaſtity of the weaker ſex; ſaying with a look of indignation directed to the painter, that for her own part, ſhe ſhould never be able to manifeſt the acknowledgment ſhe owed to providence, for having protected her laſt night, from the wicked aims of unbridled luſt. This obſervation introduced a ſeries of jokes, at the expence of Pallet, who hung his ears, and ſat with a ſilent air of dejection, fearing that through the malevolence of the phyſician, his adventure might reach

reach the ears of his wife. Indeed, though we have made ſhift to explain the whole tranſaction to the reader, it was an inextricable miſtery to every individual in the Diligence; becauſe the part which was acted by the Capuchin, was known to himſelf alone; and even he was utterly ignorant of Pickle's being concerned in the affair; ſo that the greateſt ſhare of the painter's ſufferings were ſuppoſed to be the exaggerations of his own extravagant imagination.

In the midſt of their diſcourſe on this extraordinary ſubject, the driver told them, that they were now on the very ſpot where a detachment of the allied army had been intercepted and cut off by the French; and ſtopping the vehicle, entertained them with a local deſcription of the battle of Melle. Upon this occaſion, the Flemiſh lady, who ſince her marriage had become a keen partizan for the French, gave a minute detail of all the circumſtances, as they had been repreſented to her by her huſband's brother, who was in the action. This account, which ſunk the number of the French to ſixteen, and raiſed that of the allies to twenty thouſand men, was ſo diſagreeable to truth, as well as to the laudable partiality of Peregrine, that he ventured to contradict her aſſertions, and a fierce diſpute commenced, that not only regarded the preſent queſtion, but alſo comprehended all the battles in which the duke of Marlborough had commanded againſt Lewis the fourteenth. In the courſe of theſe debates, ſhe diveſted that great general of all the glory he had acquired, by affirming, that every victory he gained was purpoſely loſt by the French generals, in order to bring the ſchemes of madam de Maintenon into diſcredit; and as a par-

particular inſtance, alledged that while the citadel of Liſle was beſieged, Lewis ſaid, in preſence of the Dauphin, that if the allies ſhould be obliged to raiſe the ſiege, he would immediately declare his marriage with that lady; upon which, the ſon ſent private orders to marſhal Boufflers to ſurrender the place. This ſtrange allegation was ſupported by the aſſeverations of the prieſt and the courtezan, and admitted as truth by the governor, who pretended to have heard it from good authority: while the doctor ſat neutral, as one who thought it ſcandalous to know the hiſtory of ſuch modern events. The Iſraelite, being a true Dutchman, liſted himſelf under the banners of our hero, who, in attempting to demonſtrate the abſurdity and improbability of what they had advanced, raiſed ſuch a hue and cry againſt himſelf, and being inſenſibly heated in the altercation, irritated his Amanda to ſuch a degree, that her charming eyes kindled with fury, and he ſaw great reaſon to think, that if he did not fall upon ſome method to deprecate her wrath, ſhe would in a twinkling ſacrifice all her eſteem for him, to her own zeal for the glory of the French nation. Moved by this apprehenſion, his ardour cooled by degrees, and he inſenſibly detached himſelf from the argument, leaving the whole care of ſupporting it on the Jew, who finding himſelf deſerted, was fain to yield at diſcretion; ſo that the French remained maſters of the field, and their young heroine reſumed her good humour.

Our hero having prudently ſubmitted to the ſuperior intelligence of his fair enſlaver, began to be harraſſed with the fears of loſing her for ever, and ſet his invention at work, to contrive ſome means

means of indemnifying himſelf for his aſſiduities, preſents, and the diſappointment he had already undergone. On pretence of enjoying a freer air, he mounted the box, and employed his elocution and generoſity with ſuch ſucceſs, that the driver undertook to diſable the Diligence from proceeding beyond the town of Aloſt for that day; and in conſequence of his promiſe, gently overturned it, when they were but a mile ſhort of that baiting place. He had taken his meaſures ſo diſcreetly, that this accident was attended with no other inconvenience than a fit of fear that took poſſeſſion of the ladies, and the neceſſity to which they were reduced by the declaration of the coachman, who, upon examining the carriage, aſſured the company that the axle-tree had given way, and adviſed them to walk forward to the inn, while he would jog after them at a ſlow pace, and do his endeavour that the damage ſhould be immediately repaired. Peregrine pretended to be very much concerned at what had happened, and even curſed the driver for his inadvertancy, expreſſing infinite impatience to be at Bruſſels, and wiſhing that this misfortune might not detain them another night upon the road; but when his underſtrapper, according to his inſtructions, came afterwards to the inn, and gave them to underſtand that the workman he had employed could not poſſibly refit the machine in leſs than ſix hours, the crafty youth affected to loſe all temper, ſtormed at his emiſſary, whom he reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms, and threatened to cane for his miſconduct. The fellow proteſted, with great humility, that their being overturned was owing to the failure of the axle-tree, and not to his want of care or dexterity in driving; though rather than be thought

though the cauſe of incommoding him, he would inquire for a poſt-chaiſe, in which he might depart for Bruſſels immediately. This expedient Pickle rejected, unleſs the whole company could be accommodated in the ſame manner; and he had been previouſly informed by the driver, that the town could not furniſh more than one vehicle of that ſort. His governor, who was quite ignorant of his ſcheme, repreſented that one night would ſoon be paſſed, and exhorted him to bear this ſmall diſappointment with a good grace, eſpecially as the houſe ſeemed to be well provided for their entertainment, and the company ſo much diſpoſed to be ſociable. The Capuchin, who had found his account in cultivating the acquaintance of the young ſtranger, was not ill-pleaſed at this event, which might, by protracting the term of their intercourſe, yield him ſome opportunity of profiting ſtill further by his liberality: he therefore joined Mr. Jolter in his admonitions, congratulating himſelf upon the proſpect of enjoying his converſation a little longer than he had expected. Our young gentleman received a compliment to the ſame purpoſe from the Hebrew, who had that day exerciſed his gallantry upon the French coquette, and was not without hope of reaping the fruits of his attention, his rival, the painter, being quite diſgraced and dejected by the adventure of laſt night. As for the doctor, he was too much ingroſſed in the contemplation of his own importance, to intereſt himſelf in the affair, or its conſequences, further than by obſerving that the European powers ought to eſtabliſh public games, like thoſe that were celebrated of old in Greece; in which caſe, every ſtate would be ſupplied with ſuch dextrous

cha-

charioteers, as would drive a machine at full ſpeed, within a hair's breadth of a precipice, without any danger of its being overthrown. Peregrine could not help yielding to their remonſtrances, and united complaiſance, for which he thanked them in very polite terms, and his paſſion ſeeming to ſubſide, propoſed that they ſhould amuſe themſelves in walking round the ramparts. He hoped to enjoy ſome private converſation with his admired Fleming, who had this whole day behaved with remarkable reſerve. The propoſal being embraced, he (as uſual) handed her into the ſtreet, and took all opportunities of promoting his ſuit; but they were attended ſo cloſely by her father confeſſor, that he foreſaw it would be impracticable to accompliſh his aim, without the connivance of that eccleſiaſtick. This he was obliged to purchaſe with another purſe, which he offered, and was accepted as a charitable atonement for his criminal behaviour during the interview which the friar had procured for the good of his ſoul. The benefaction was no ſooner made, than the pious mendicant edged off by little and little, till he joined the reſt of the company, leaving his generous patron at full liberty to proſecute his purpoſe. It is not to be doubted that our adventurer made a good uſe of this occaſion: he practiſed a thouſand flowers of rhetoric, and actually exhauſted his whole addreſs, in perſwading her to have compaſſion upon his miſery, and indulge him with another private audience, without which he ſhould run diſtracted, and be guilty of extravagancies, which, in the humanity of her diſpoſition, ſhe would weep to ſee. But, inſtead of complying with his requeſt, ſhe chid him ſeverely for

for his preſumption, in perſecuting her with his vicious addreſſes. She aſſured him, that although ſhe had ſecured a chamber for herſelf in this place, becauſe ſhe had no ambition to be better acquainted with the other lady, he would be in the wrong to diſturb her with another nocturnal viſit; for ſhe was determined to deny him admittance. The lover was comforted by this hint, which he underſtood in the true acceptation, and his paſſion being inflamed by the obſtacles he had met with, his heart beat high with the proſpect of poſſeſſion. Theſe raptures of expectation produced an inquietude, which diſabled him from bearing that ſhare of the converſation for which he uſed to be diſtinguiſhed. His behaviour at ſupper was a viciſſitude of ſtartings and reveries. The Capuchin imputing this diſorder to a ſecond repulſe from his charge, began to be invaded with the apprehenſion of being obliged to refund, and in a whiſper forebad our hero to deſpair.

CHAP. LVI.

The French coquet entraps the heart of the Jew, *againſt whom* Pallet *enters into a conſpiracy; by which* Peregrine *is again diſappointed, and the* Hebrew's *incontinence expoſed.*

MEan while the French ſyren, baulked in her deſign upon her Engliſh cully, who was ſo eaſily diſheartened, and hung his ears in manifeſt deſpondence, rather than run the riſque of

of making a voyage that ſhould be altogether unprofitable, reſolved to practice her charms upon the Dutch merchant. She had already made ſuch innovation upon his heart, that he cultivated her with peculiar complacency, gazed upon her with a moſt libidinous ſtare, and unbended his aſpect into a grin that was truly Iſraelitiſh. The painter ſaw, and was offended at this correſpondence, which he conſidered as an inſult upon his misfortune, as well as an evident preference of his rival; and conſcious of his own timidity, ſwallowed an extraordinary glaſs, that his invention might be ſtimulated, and his reſolution raiſed to the contrivance and execution of ſome ſcheme of revenge. The wine, however, failed in the expected effect, and without inſpiring him with the plan, ſerved only to quicken his deſire of vengeance; ſo that he communicated his purpoſe to his friend Peregrine, and begged his aſſiſtance; but our young gentleman was too intent upon his own affair, to mind the concerns of any other perſon, and he declining to be engaged in the project, Pallet had recourſe to the genius of Pickle's valet de chambre, who readily embarked in the undertaking, and invented a plan, which was executed accordingly.

The evening being pretty far advanced, and the company ſeparated into their reſpective apartments, Pickle repaired, in all the impatience of youth and deſire, to the chamber of his charmer, and finding the door unbolted, entered in a tranſport of joy. By the light of the moon, which ſhone through the window, he was conducted to her bed, which he approached in the utmoſt agitation, and perceiving her to all appearance aſleep, eſſayed to wake her with a gentle

gentle kiſs; but this method proved ineffectual, becauſe ſhe was determined to ſave herſelf the confuſion of being an accomplice in his guilt. He repeated the application, murmured a moſt paſſionate ſalutation in her ear, and took ſuch other gentle methods of ſignifying his preſence, as perſuaded him that ſhe was reſolved to ſleep, in ſpite of all his endeavours: fluſhed with this agreeable ſuppoſition, he locked the door, in order to prevent interruption, and ſtealing himſelf under the cloaths, ſet fortune at defiance, while he held the fair creature circled in his arms.

Nevertheleſs, near as he ſeemed to be to the happy accompliſhment of his deſire, his hope was again fruſtrated by a fearful noiſe, which in a moment awaked his Amanda in a fright, and for the preſent engaged all his attention. His valet de chambre, whom Pallet had conſulted as a confederate in his revenge againſt the lady of pleaſure and her Jewiſh gallant, had hired of certain Bohemians, who chanced to lodge at the inn, a jack-aſs adorned with bells, which, when every body was retired to reſt, and the Hebrew ſuppoſed to be bedded with his miſtreſs, they led up-ſtairs into a long thoroughfare, from which the chambers were detached on each ſide. The painter, perceiving the lady's door a jar, according to his expectation, mounted this animal, with intention to ride into the room, and diſturb the lovers in the midſt of their mutual endearments; but the aſs, true to his kind, finding himſelf beſtrid by an unknown rider, inſtead of advancing in obedience to his conductor, retreated backward to the other end of the paſſage, in ſpite of all the efforts of the painter, who

who ſpurred and kicked, and pummelled to no purpoſe. It was the noiſe of this contention between Pallet and the aſs, which invaded the ears of Peregrine and his miſtreſs, neither of whom could form the leaſt rational conjecture about the cauſe of ſuch ſtrange diſturbance, which increaſed as the animals approached their apartment. At length, the Bourrique's retrograde motion was obſtructed by their door, which it forced open, in a twinkling, with one kick, and entered with ſuch complication of ſound, as terrified the lady almoſt into a fit, and threw her lover into the utmoſt perplexity and confuſion. The painter, finding himſelf thus violently intruded into the bed chamber of he knew not whom, and dreading the reſentment of the poſſeſſor, who might diſcharge a piſtol at him as a robber who had broke into his apartment, was overwhelmed with conſternation, and redoubled his exertion, to accompliſh a ſpeedy retreat, ſweating all the time with fear, and putting up petitions to heaven for his ſafety; but his obſtinate companion, regardleſs of his ſituation, inſtead of ſubmitting to his conduct, began to turn round like a milſtone, the united ſound of his feet and bells producing a moſt ſurpriſing concert. The unfortunate rider, whirled about in this manner, would have quitted his ſeat, and left the beaſt to his own amuſement, but the rotation was ſo rapid, that the terror of a ſevere fall hindered him from attempting to diſmount, and in the deſperation of his heart, he ſeized one of its ears, which he pinched ſo unmercifully, that the creature ſet up his throat, and brayed aloud. This hideous exclamation was no ſooner heard by the fair Fleming, already chilled with panic, and pre-

prepared with ſuperſtition, than, believing herſelf viſited by the devil, who was permitted to puniſh her for her infidelity to the marriage-bed, ſhe uttered a ſcream, and began to repeat her paternoſter with a loud voice. Her lover, finding himſelf under the neceſſity of retiring, ſtarted up, and ſtung with the moſt violent pangs of rage and diſappointment, ran directly to the ſpot from whence this diabolical noiſe ſeemed to proceed. There encountering the aſs, he diſcharged ſuch a volley of blows at him and his rider, that the creature carried him off at a round trot, and they roared in uniſon all the way. Having thus cleared the room of ſuch diſagreeable company, he went back to his miſtreſs, and aſſuring her, that this was only ſome fooliſh prank of Pallet, took his leave, with a promiſe of returning after the quiet of the inn ſhould be reeſtabliſhed.

In the mean time the noiſe of the Bourrique, the cries of the painter, and the lady's ſcream, had alarmed the whole houſe; and the aſs, in the precipitation of his retreat, ſeeing people with lights before him, took ſhelter in the apartment for which he was at firſt deſigned, juſt as the Levite, arouſed at the uproar, had quitted his Dulcinea, and was attempting to recover his own chamber, unperceived. Seeing himſelf oppoſed by ſuch an animal, mounted by a tall, meagre, lanthorn-jaw'd figure, half naked, with a white night-cap upon his head, which added to the natural paleneſs of his complexion, the Jew was ſorely troubled in mind, and believing it to be an apparition of Balaam and his aſs, fled backward with a nimble pace, and crept under the bed, where he lay concealed. Mr. Jolter, and the

the prieſt, who were the foremoſt of thoſe who had been aroused by the noiſe, were not unmoved when they ſaw ſuch a ſpectacle ruſhing into this chamber, from whence the lady of pleaſure began to ſhriek. The governor made a full halt, and the Capuchin diſcovered no inclination to proceed. They were (however) by the preſſure of the crowd that followed them, thruſt forward to the door, through which the viſion entered; and there Jolter with great ceremony, complimented his reverence with the pas, beſeeching him to walk in. The mendicant was too courteous and humble to accept this preheminence, and a very earneſt diſpute enſued; during which the aſs, in the courſe of his circuit, ſhewed himſelf and rider, and in a trice decided the conteſt; for, ſtruck with this ſecond glimpſe, both, at one inſtant, ſprung backward with ſuch force, as overturned their next men, who communicated the impulſe to thoſe that ſtood behind them, and theſe again to others; ſo that the whole paſſage was ſtrewed with a long file of people, that lay in a line, like the ſequel and dependance of a pack of cards. In the midſt of this havock, our hero returned from his own room with an air of aſtoniſhment, aſking the cauſe of this uproar. Receiving ſuch hints of intelligence as Jolter's conſternation would permit him to give, he ſnatched the candle out of his hand, and advanced into the haunted chamber without heſitation, being followed by all preſent, who broke forth into a long and loud peal of laughter, when they perceived the ludicrous ſource of their diſquiet. The painter himſelf made an effort to join their mirth, but he had been ſo harrowed by fear, and ſmarted ſo much

much with the pain of the diſcipline he had received from Pickle, that he could not, with all his endeavour, vanquiſh the ruefulneſs of his countenance. His attempt ſerved only to increaſe the awkwardneſs of his ſituation, which was not at all mended by the behaviour of the coquette, who, furious with her diſappointment, ſlipped on a petticoat and bed-gown, and ſpringing upon him, like another Hecuba, with her nails, deprived all one ſide of his noſe of the ſkin, and would not have left him an eye to ſee thro', if ſome of the company had not reſcued him from her unmerciful talons. Provoked at this outrage, as well as by her behaviour to him in the Diligence, he publickly explained his intention in entering her chamber in this equipage; and miſſing the Hebrew among the ſpectators, aſſured them, that he muſt have abſconded ſome where in the apartment. In purſuance of this intimation, the room was immediately ſearched, and the mortified Levite pulled by the heels from his lurking-place; ſo that Pallet had the good fortune, at laſt, to transfer the laugh from himſelf to his rival, and the French inamorata, who accordingly underwent the ridicule of the whole audience.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVII.

Pallet, *endeavouring to unravel the miſtery of the treatment he had received, falls out of the frying-pan into the fire.*

NEvertheleſs, Pallet was ſtill confounded, and chagrined by one conſideration, which was no other than that of his having been ſo roughly handled in the chamber, belonging (as he found upon inquiry) to the handſome young lady, who was under the Capuchin's direction. He recollected, that the door was faſt locked, when his beaſt burſt it open; and he had no reaſon to believe that any perſon followed him in his irruption; on the other hand, he could not imagine, that ſuch a gentle creature would either attempt to commit, or be able to execute ſuch a deſperate aſſault as that which his body had ſuſtained; and her demeanor was ſo modeſt and circumſpect, that he durſt not harbour the leaſt ſuſpicion of her virtue.

Theſe reflections bewildered him in the labyrinth of thought: he rummaged his whole imagination, endeavouring to account for what had happened. At length he concluded, that either Peregrine, or the devil, or both, muſt have been at the bottom of the whole affair, and determined, for the ſatisfaction of his curioſity, to watch our hero's motions, during the remaining part of the night, ſo narrowly, that his conduct, myſterious as it was, ſhould not be able to elude his penetration.

With theſe ſentiments he retired to his own room, after the aſs had been reſtored to the

right owners, and the prieſt had viſited and confirmed his fair ward, who had been almoſt diſtracted with fear. Silence no ſooner prevailed again, than he crawled darkling towards her door, and huddled himſelf up in an obſcure corner, from whence he might obſerve the ingreſs or egreſs of any human creature. He had not long remained in this poſture, when, fatigued with this adventure, and that of the preceding night, his faculties were gradually overpowered with ſlumber; and falling faſt aſleep, he began to ſnore like a whole congregation of preſbyterians. The Flemiſh beauty, hearing this diſcordant noiſe in the paſſage, began to be afraid of ſome new alarm, and very prudently bolted her door: ſo that when her lover wanted to repeat his viſit, he was not only ſurpriſed and incenſed at this diſagreeable ſerenade, the author of which he did not know; but when compelled by his paſſion, which was by this time wound to the higheſt pitch, he ventured to approach the entrance, he had the extreme mortification to find himſelf ſhut out. He durſt not knock, or ſignify his preſence in any other manner, on account of the lady's reputation, which would have greatly ſuffered, had the ſnorer been waked by his endeavours. Had he known that the perſon who thus thwarted his views, was the painter, he would have taken ſome effectual ſtep to remove him; but he could not conceive what ſhould induce Pallet to take up his reſidence in that corner; nor could he uſe the aſſiſtance of a light, to diſtinguiſh him, becauſe there was not a candle burning in the houſe.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the rage and vexation of our hero, while he continued thus tantalized

lized upon the brink of bliſs, after his deſire had been exaſperated by the circumſtances of his two former diſappointments. He ejaculated a thouſand execrations againſt his own fortune, curſed all his fellow-travellers, without exception, vowed revenge againſt the painter, who had twice confounded his moſt intereſting ſcheme, and was tempted to execute immediate vengeance upon the unknown cauſe of his preſent miſcarriage. In this agony of diſtraction did he ſweat two whole hours in the paſſage, though not without ſome faint hope of being delivered from his tormentor, who (he imagined) upon waking, would undoubtedly ſhift his quarters, and leave the field free to his deſigns; but when he heard the cock repeat his ſalutation to the morn, which began to open on the rear of night, he could no longer reſtrain his indignation. Going to his own chamber, he filled a baſon with cold water, and, ſtanding at ſome diſtance, diſcharged it full in the face of the gaping ſnorer, who, over and above the ſurprize occaſioned by the application, was almoſt ſuffocated by the liquor that entered his mouth, and ran down into his wind-pipe. While he gaſped like a perſon half drowned, without knowing the nature of his diſaſter, or remembring the ſituation in which he fell aſleep, Peregrine retired to his own door, and, to his no ſmall aſtoniſhment, from a long howl that invaded his ears, learned that the patient was no other than Pallet, who had now, for the third time, baulked his good fortune.

Enraged at the complicated treſpaſſes of this unfortunate offender, he ruſhed from his apartment with a horſe-whip, and encountering the painter in his flight, overturned him in the paſ-

ſage. There he exerciſed the inſtrument of his wrath with great ſeverity, on pretence of miſtaking him for ſome preſumptuous cur, which had diſturbed the repoſe of the inn; nay, when he called aloud for mercy in a ſupplicating tone, and his chaſtiſer could no longer pretend to treat him as a quadruped; ſuch was the virulence of the young gentleman's indignation, that he could not help declaring his ſatisfaction, by telling Pallet he had richly deſerved the puniſhment he had undergone, for his madneſs, folly and impertinence, in contriving and executing ſuch idle ſchemes, as had no other tendency than that of plaguing his neighbours.

Pallet proteſted, with great vehemence, that he was innocent, as the child unborn, of an intention to give umbrage to any perſon whatever, except the Iſraelite and his doxy, who he knew had incurred his diſpleaſure. "But, as God is my Saviour! (ſaid he) I believe I am perſecuted with witchcraft, and begin to think that damn'd prieſt is an agent for the devil; for he has been but two nights in our company, during which I have not cloſed an eye; but, on the contrary, have been tormented by all the fiends of hell." Pickle peeviſhly replied, that his torments had been occaſioned by his own fooliſh imagination; and aſked how he come to howl in that corner. The painter, who did not think proper to own the truth, ſaid, that he had been tranſported thither, by ſome preternatural conveyance, and ſouſed in water by an inviſible hand. The youth, in hope of profiting by his abſence, adviſed him to retire immediately to his bed, and by ſleep ſtrive to comfort his brain, which ſeemed to be not a little diſordered by the want of that refreſhment.

Pallet himſelf began to be very much of the ſame way of thinking; and, in compliance with ſuch wholeſome counſel, betook himſelf to reſt, muttering prayers all the way for the recovery of his own underſtanding.

Pickle attended him to his chamber, and locking him up, put the key in his own pocket, that he might not have it in his power to interrupt him again: but in his return he was met by Mr. Jolter and the doctor, who had been a ſecond time alarmed by the painter's cries, and come to enquire about this new adventure. Half frantic with ſuch a ſeries of diſappointments, he curſed them in his heart for their unſeaſonable appearance. When they queſtioned him about Pallet, he told them he had found him ſtark ſtaring mad, howling in a corner, and wet to the ſkin, and conducted him to his room, where he was now abed. The phyſician hearing this circumſtance, made a merit of his vanity; and, under pretence of concern for the patient's welfare, deſired he might have an opportunity of examining the ſymptoms of his diſorder, without loſs of time; alledging, that many diſeaſes might have been ſtifled in the birth, which afterwards baffled all the endeavours of the medical art. The young gentleman accordingly delivered the key, and once more withdrew into his own chamber, with a view of ſeizing the firſt occaſion that ſhould preſent itſelf of renewing his application to his Amanda's door; while the doctor, in his way to Pallet's apartment, hinted to the governor his ſuſpicion, that the patient laboured under that dreadful ſymptom called the hydrophobia, which he obſerved had ſometimes appeared in perſons who were not previouſly bit by a mad dog. This

conjecture he founded upon the howl he uttered when he was ſouſed with water, and began to recollect certain circumſtances of the painter's behaviour for ſome days paſt, which now he could plainly perceive had prognoſticated ſome ſuch calamity. He then aſcribed the diſtemper to the violent frights he had lately undergone; affirmed that the affair of the Baſtile had made ſuch a violent incroachment upon his underſtanding, that his manner of thinking and ſpeaking was intirely altered. By a theory of his own invention, he explained the effects of fear upon a looſe ſyſtem of nerves, and demonſtrated the modus in which the animal ſpirits operate upon the ideas and power of imagination.

This diſquiſition, which was communicated at the painter's door, might have laſted till breakfaſt, had not Jolter reminded him of his own maxim, *Venienti occurrite morbo*; upon which he put the key to immediate uſe, and they walked ſoftly towards the bed, where the patient lay extended at full length in the arms of ſleep. The phyſician took notice of his breathing hard, and his mouth being open; and from theſe diagnoſtics declared, that the liquidum nervoſum was intimately affected, and the ſaliva impregnated with the ſpiculated particles of the virus, howſoever contracted. This ſentence was ſtill farther confirmed by the ſtate of his pulſe, which being full and ſlow, indicated an oppreſſed circulation, from a loſs of elaſticity in the propelling arteries. He propoſed that he ſhould immediately ſuffer a ſecond aſperſion of water, which would not only contribute to the cure, but alſo certify them beyond all poſſibility of doubt, with regard to the ſtate of the diſeaſe: for it would evidently appear,

appear, from the manner in which he would bear the application, whether or not his horror of water amounted to a confirmed hydrophobia. Mr. Jolter, in compliance with this propoſal, began to empty a bottle of water, which he found in the room in a baſon; when he was interrupted by the preſcriber, who adviſed him to uſe the contents of the chamber-pot, which being impregnated with ſalt, would operate more effectually than pure element. Thus directed, the governor lifted up the veſſel, which was replete with medicine, and with one turn of his hand diſcharged the whole healing inundation upon the ill-omen'd patient, who waking in the utmoſt diſtraction of horror, yelled moſt hideouſly, juſt at the time when Peregrine had brought his miſtreſs to a parley, and entertained hopes of being admitted into her chamber.

Terrified at this exclamation, ſhe inſtantly broke off the treaty, beſeeching him to retire from the door, that her honour might receive no injury from his being found in that place; and he had juſt enough of recollection left to ſee the neceſſity of obeying the order; in conformity to which he retreated well nigh deprived of his ſenſes, and almoſt perſuaded, that ſo many unaccountable diſappointments muſt have proceeded from ſome ſupernatural cauſe, of which the idiot Pallet was no more than the involuntary inſtrument.

Mean while, the doctor having aſcertained the malady of the patient, whoſe cries, interrupted by frequent ſobs and ſighs, he interpreted into the barking of a dog; and having no more ſalt water at hand, reſolved to renew the bath with ſuch materials as chance would afford. He actually

laid hold of the bottle and baſon; but by this time the painter had recovered the uſe of his ſenſes ſo well, as to perceive his drift; and ſtarting up, like a frantic Bedlamite, ran directly to his ſword, ſwearing with many horrid imprecations, that he would murder them both immediately, if he ſhould be hanged before dinner. They did not chooſe to wait the iſſue of his threat, but retired with ſuch precipitation, that the phyſician had almoſt diſlocated his ſhoulder, by running againſt one ſide of the entry. Jolter having pulled the door after him, and turned the key, betook himſelf to flight, roaring aloud for aſſiſtance. His collegue ſeeing the door ſecured, valued himſelf upon his reſolution, and exhorted him to return; declaring, that for his own part, he was more afraid of the madman's teeth than of his weapon; and admoniſhing the governor to re enter, and execute what they had left undone. "Go in (ſaid he) without fear or apprehenſion, and if any accident ſhall happen to you, either from his ſlaver or his ſword, I will aſſiſt you with my advice, which from this ſtation I can more cooly and diſtinctly adminiſter, than I ſhould be able to ſupply, if my ideas were diſturbed, or my attention engaged in any perſonal concern."

Jolter, who could make no objection to the juſtneſs of the concluſion, frankly owned, that he had no inclination to try the experiment; obſerving, that ſelf preſervation was the firſt law of nature; that his connexions with the unhappy lunatic were but ſlight, and that it could not be reaſonably expected, that he would run ſuch riſks for his ſervice, as were declined by one who had ſet out with him from England, on the footing of

a companion. This insinuation introduced a dispute upon the nature of benevolence, and the moral sense, which (the republican argued) existed independent of any private consideration, and could never be affected by any contingent circumstance of time and fortune; while the other, who abhorred his principles, asserted the duties and excellence of private friendship, with infinite rancour of altercation.

During the hottest of the argument, they were joined by the Capuchin, who being astonished to see them thus virulently engaged at the door, and to hear the painter bellowing within the chamber, conjured them, in the name of God, to tell him the cause of that confusion, which had kept the whole house in continual alarm during the best part of the night, and seemed to be the immediate work of the devil and his angels. When the governor gave him to understand, that Pallet was visited with an evil spirit, he muttered a prayer of St. Antonio de Padua, and undertook to cure the painter, provided he could be secured so as that he might, without danger to himself, burn part of a certain relick under his nose, which he assured them was equal to the miraculous power of Eleazar's ring. They expressed great curiosity to know what this treasure was; and the priest was prevailed upon to tell them in confidence, that it was a collection of the pairings of the nails belonging to those two madmen, whom Jesus purged of the legion of devils that afterwards entered the swine. So saying, he pulled from one of his pockets a small box, containing about an ounce of the pairings of an horse's hoof; at sight of which, the governor could not help smiling, on account of the grossness of the imposition.

The doctor aſked, with a ſupercilious ſmile, whether thoſe maniacs whom Jeſus cured, were of the ſorrel complexion, or dapple grey; for, from the texture of theſe parings, he could prove, that the original owners were of the quadruped order, and even diſtinguiſh, that their feet had been fortified with ſhoes of iron.

The mendicant, who bore an inveterate grudge againſt this ſon of Æſculapius, ever ſince he had made ſo free with the catholic religion, replied, with great bitterneſs, that he was a wretch with whom no Chriſtian ought to communicate; that the vengeance of heaven would one day overtake him, on account of his profanity; and that his heart was ſhod with a metal much harder than iron, which nothing but hell-fire would be able to melt.

It was now broad day, and all the ſervants of the inn were a foot. Peregrine, ſeeing it would be impoſſible to obtain any ſort of indemnification for the time he had loſt; and the perturbation of his ſpirits hindering him from enjoying repoſe, which was, moreover, obſtructed by the noiſe of Pallet and his attendants, put on his cloaths at once, and, in exceeding ill humour, arrived at the ſpot where this triumvirate ſtood debating about the means of overpowering the furious painter, who ſtill continued his ſong of oaths and execrations, and made ſundry efforts to break open the door. Chagrin'd as our hero was, he could not help laughing when he heard how the patient had been treated; and his indignation changing into compaſſion, he called to him thro' the key-hole, deſiring to know the reaſon of his diſtracted behaviour. Pallet no ſooner recognized his voice, than lowering his own to a whimpering tone,

tone, "My dear friend! (ſaid he) I have at laſt detected the ruffians who have perſecuted me ſo much. I caught them in the fact of ſuffocating me with cold water; and by the Lord I will be revenged, or may I never live to finiſh my Cleopatra. For the love of God! open the door, and I will make that conceited pagan, that pretender to taſte, that falſe devotee of the ancients, who poiſons people with ſillykickabies and devil's dung; I ſay, I will make him a monument of my wrath, and an example to all the cheats and impoſtors of the faculty: and as for that thick-headed inſolent pedant his confederate, who emptied my own jordan upon me while I ſlept, he had better have been in his beloved Paris, botching ſchemes for his friend the pretender, than incur the effects of my reſentment. Gadſbodikins! I won't leave him a wind-pipe for the hangman to ſtop, at the end of another rebellion."

Pickle told him, his conduct had been ſo extravagant, as to confirm the whole company in the belief, that he was actually deprived of his ſenſes; on which ſuppoſition, Mr Jolter and the doctor had acted the part of friends, in doing that which they thought moſt conducive to his recovery; ſo that their concern merited his thankful acknowledgment, inſtead of his frantic menaces: that for his own part, he would be the firſt to condemn him, as one utterly bereft of his wits, and give orders for his being ſecured as a madman, unleſs he would immediately give a proof of his ſanity, by laying aſide his ſword, compoſing his ſpirits, and thanking his injured friends for their care of his perſon.

This alternative quieted his tranſports in a moment; he was terrified at the apprehenſion of being treated like a Bedlamite, being dubious of the ſtate of his own brain; and, on the other hand, had conceived ſuch an horror and antipathy for his tormenters, that, far from believing himſelf obliged by what they had done, he could not even think of them without the utmoſt rage and deteſtation. He therefore, in the moſt tranquil voice he could aſſume, proteſted, that he never was leſs out of his ſenſes than at preſent, though he did not know how long he might retain them, if he ſhould be conſidered in the light of a lunatic: that, in order to prove his being *compos mentis*, he was willing to ſacrifice the reſentment he ſo juſtly harboured againſt thoſe who, by their malice, had brought him to this paſs: but, as he apprehended, it would be the greateſt ſign of madneſs he could exhibit, to thank them for the miſchiefs they had bronght upon him, he deſired to be excuſed from making any ſuch conceſſion; and ſwore he would endure every thing, rather than be guilty of ſuch mean abſurdity.

Peregrine held a conſultation upon this reply, when the governor and phyſician ſtrenuouſly argued againſt any capitulation with a maniac, and propoſed that ſome method might be taken to ſeize, fetter and convey him into a dark room, where he might be treated according to the rules of art. But the Capuchin underſtanding the circumſtances of the caſe, undertook to reſtore him to his former ſtate, without having any recourſe to ſuch violent meaſures. Pickle, who was a better judge of the affair than any perſon preſent, opened the door without further heſitation, and

diſplayed

diſplayed the poor painter ſtanding with a woeful countenance, ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was as wet as if he had been dragged through the Dender: a ſpectacle which gave ſuch offence to the chaſte eyes of the Hebrew's miſtreſs, who was by this time one of the ſpectators, that ſhe turned her head another way, and withdrew to her own room, exclaiming againſt the indecent practices of men.

Pallet, ſeeing the young gentleman enter, ran to him, and, ſhaking him by the hand, called him his beſt friend, and ſaid he had reſcued him from thoſe who had a deſign againſt his life. The prieſt would have produced his parings, and applied them to his noſe; but was hindered by Pickle, who adviſed the patient to ſhift himſelf, and put on his cloaths. This being done, with great order and deliberation, Mr. Jolter, who, with the doctor, had kept a wary diſtance, in expectation of ſeeing ſome ſtrange effects of his diſtraction, began to believe that he had been guilty of a miſtake, and accuſed the phyſician of having miſled him by his falſe diagnoſtic. The doctor ſtill inſiſted upon his former declaration; aſſuring him, that although Pallet enjoyed a ſhort interval for the preſent, the delirium would ſoon recur, unleſs they would profit by this momentary calm, and order him to be blooded, bliſtered and purged with all imaginable diſpatch.

The governor, however, notwithſtanding this caution, advanced to the injured party, and begg'd pardon for the ſhare he had in giving him ſuch diſturbance. He declared, in the moſt ſolemn manner, that he had no other intention than that of contributing towards his welfare, and that his behaviour was the reſult of the phyſician's

ſician's preſcription, which he affirmed was abſolutely neceſſary for the recovery of his health.

The painter, who had very little gall in his diſpoſition, was ſatisfied with this apology; but his reſentment, which was before divided, now glowed with double fire againſt his firſt fellow-traveller, whom he looked upon as the author of all the miſchances he had undergone, and marked out for his vengeance accordingly. Yet the doors of reconciliation were not ſhut againſt the doctor, who, with great juſtice, might have tranſferred this load of offence from himſelf to Peregrine; who was, without doubt, the ſource of the painter's misfortune: but, in that caſe, he muſt have owned himſelf miſtaken in his medical capacity; and he did not think the friendſhip of Pallet important enough to be retrieved by ſuch condeſcenſion; ſo that he reſolved to neglect him intirely, and gradually forget the former correſpondence he had maintained with a perſon whom he deemed ſo unworthy of his notice.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVIII.

Peregrine, *almoſt diſtracted with his diſappointments, conjures the fair* Fleming *to permit his viſits at* Bruſſels. *She withdraws from his purſuit.*

THINGS being thus adjuſted, and all the company dreſſed, they went to breakfaſt about five in the morning; and in leſs than an hour after were ſeated in the Diligence, where a profound ſilence prevailed. Peregrine, who uſed to be the life of the ſociety, being extremely penſive and melancholy, on account of his miſhap, the Iſraelite and his Dulcinea dejected in conſequence of their diſgrace, the poet abſorpt in lofty meditation, the painter in ſchemes of revenge, while Jolter, rocked by the motion of the carriage, made himſelf amends for the want of reſt he had ſuſtained, and the Mendicant, with his fair charge, were infected by the cloudy aſpect of our youth, in whoſe diſappointment each of them, for different reaſons, bore no inconſiderable ſhare. This general languor and receſs from all bodily exerciſe, diſpoſed them all to receive the gentle yoke of ſlumber; and in half an hour after they had embarked, there was not one of them awake, except our hero and his miſtreſs, unleſs the Capuchin was pleaſed to counterfeit ſleep, in order to indulge our young gentleman with an opportunity of enjoying ſome private converſation with his beauteous ward.

Peregrine did not neglect the occaſion; but, on the contrary, ſeized the firſt minute, and, in gentle

gentle murmurs, lamented his hardhap in being thus the ſport of fortune. He aſſured her, (and that with great ſincerity) that all the croſs accidents of his life had not coſt him one half of the vexation and keenneſs of chagrin which he had ſuffered laſt night; and that now he was on the brink of parting from her, he ſhould be overwhelmed with the blackeſt deſpair, if ſhe would not extend her compaſſion ſo far as to give him an opportunity of ſighing at her feet in Bruſſels, during the few days his affairs would permit him to ſpend in that city.

This young lady, with an air of mortification, expreſſed her ſorrow for being the innocent cauſe of his anxiety; ſaid, ſhe hoped laſt night's adventure would be a ſalutary warning to both their ſouls; for ſhe was perſuaded, that her virtue was protected by the intervention of heaven; that whatever impreſſion it might have made upon him, ſhe was enabled by it to adhere to that duty from which her paſſion had begun to ſwerve; and beſeeching him to forget her for his own peace, gave him to underſtand, that neither the plan ſhe had laid down for her own conduct, nor the dictates of her honour, would allow her to receive his viſits, or carry on any other correſpondence with him, while ſhe was reſtricted by the articles of her marriage-vow.

This explanation produced ſuch a violent effect upon her admirer, that he was for ſome minutes deprived of the faculty of ſpeech; which he no ſooner recovered, than he gave vent to the moſt unbridled tranſports of paſſion. He taxed her with barbarity and indifference; told her that ſhe had robbed him of his reaſon and internal peace; that he would follow her to the

ends

ends of the earth, and ceaſe to live ſooner than ceaſe to love her; that he would ſacrifice the innocent fool who had been the occaſion of all this diſquiet, and murder every man whom he conſidered as an obſtruction to his views. In a word, his paſſions, which had continued ſo long in a ſtate of the higheſt fermentation, together with the want of that repoſe which calms and quiets the perturbation of the ſpirits, had wrought him up to a pitch of real diſtraction. While he uttered theſe delirious expreſſions, the tears ran down his cheeks; and he underwent ſuch agitation, that the tender heart of the fair Fleming was affected with his condition; and, while her own face was bedewed with the ſtreams of ſympathy, ſhe begged him, for heaven's ſake, to be compoſed; and promiſed, for his ſatisfaction, to abate ſomewhat of the rigor of her purpoſe. Conſoled by this kind declaration, he recollected himſelf; and, taking out his pencil, gave her his addreſs, when ſhe had aſſured him, that he ſhould hear from her in four and twenty hours at fartheſt, after their ſeparation.

Thus ſoothed, he regained the empire of himſelf, and, by degrees, recovered his ſerenity. But this was not the caſe with his Amanda, who, from this ſample of his diſpoſition, dreaded the impetuoſity of his youth, and was effectually deterred from entering into any engagements that might ſubject her peace and reputation to the raſh effects of ſuch a violent ſpirit. Though ſhe was captivated by his perſon and accompliſhments, ſhe had reflection enough to foreſee, that the longer ſhe countenanced his paſſion, her own heart would be more and more irretrievably engaged, and the quiet of her life the more expoſed

poſed to continual interruption. She therefore profited by theſe conſiderations, and a ſenſe of religious honour, which helped her to underſtand the ſuggeſtions of inclination; and reſolved to amuſe her lover with falſe hopes, until ſhe ſhould have it in her power to relinquiſh his converſation, without running any riſk of ſuffering by the inconſiderate ſallies of his love. It was with this view, that ſhe deſired he would not inſiſt upon attending her to her mother's houſe, when the Diligence arrived at Bruſſels; and he, cajoled by her artifice, took a formal leave of her, together with the other ſtrangers, fixing his habitation at the inn to which he and his fellow-travellers had been directed, in the impatient expectation of receiving a kind ſummons from her, within the limited time.

Mean while, in order to divert his imagination, he went to ſee the ſtadthouſe, park and arſenal, took a ſuperficial view of the bookſeller's cabinet of curioſities, and ſpent the evening at the Italian opera, which was at that time exhibited for the entertainment of Prince Charles of Lorrain, then governor of the Low Countries. In ſhort, the ſtated period was almoſt elapſed, when Peregrine received a letter to this purpoſe:

"SIR,

IF you knew what violence I do my own heart, in declaring that I have withdrawn myſelf for ever from your addreſſes, you would ſurely applaud the ſacrifice I make to virtue, and ſtrive to imitate this example of ſelf-denial. Yes, Sir, heaven hath lent me grace to ſtruggle with my guilty paſſion, and henceforth to avoid the dangerous ſight of him who inſpired it. I therefore conjure

conjure you, by the regard you ought to have for the eternal welfare of us both, as well as by the eſteem and affection you profeſs, to war with your unruly inclination, and deſiſt from all attempts of fruſtrating the laudable reſolution I have made. Seek not to invade the peace of one who loves you, to diſturb the quiet of a family that never did you wrong, and to alienate the thoughts of a weak woman from a deſerving man, who, by the moſt ſacred claim, ought to have the full poſſeſſion of her heart."

This billet, without either date or ſubſcription, baniſhed all remains of diſcretion from the mind of our hero, who ran inſtantly to the landlord in all the extaſy of madneſs, and demanded to ſee the meſſenger who brought the letter, on pain of putting his whole family to the ſword. The innkeeper, terrified by his looks and menaces, fell upon his knees, proteſting, in the face of heaven, that he was utterly ignorant and innocent of any thing that could give him offence, and that the billet was brought by a perſon whom he did not know, and who retired immediately; ſaying, it required no anſwer. He then gave utterance to his fury, in a thouſand imprecations and invectives againſt the writer, whom he diſhonoured with the appellations of a coquette, a jilt, an adventurer, who, by means of a pimping prieſt, had defrauded him of his money. He denounced vengeance againſt the Mendicant, whom he ſwore he would deſtroy, if ever he ſhould ſet eyes on him again. The painter unluckily appearing during this paroxyſm of rage, he ſeized him by the throat, ſaying, he was ruined by his accurſed folly; and, in all likelihood, poor Pallet would have

have been ſtrangled, had not Jolter interpoſed in his behalf, beſeeching his pupil to have mercy upon the ſufferer, and, with infinite anxiety, deſiring to know the cauſe of this violent aſſault. He received no anſwer, but a ſtring of incoherent curſes. When the painter, with unſpeakable aſtoniſhment, took God to witneſs, that he had done nothing to diſoblige him, the governor began to think, in ſad earneſt, that Peregrine's vivacity had at length riſen to the tranſports of actual madneſs, and was himſelf almoſt diſtracted with this ſuppoſition. That he might the better judge what remedy ought to be applied, he uſed his whole influence, and practiſed all his eloquence upon the youth, in order to learn the immediate cauſe of his delirium. He employed the moſt pathetic intreaties, and even ſhed tears in the courſe of his ſupplication; ſo that Pickle (the firſt violence of the hurricane being blown over) was aſhamed of his own imprudence, and retired to his chamber, in order to recollect his diſſipated thoughts: there he ſhut himſelf up, and, for the ſecond time, peruſing the fatal epiſtle, began to waver in his opinion of the author's character and intention. He ſometimes conſidered her as one of thoſe nymphs who, under the maſk of innocence and ſimplicity, practice upon the hearts and purſes of unwary and unexperienced youths: this was the ſuggeſtion of his wrath, inflamed by diſappointment; but, when he reflected upon the circumſtances of her behaviour, and recalled her particular charms to his imagination, the ſeverity of his cenſure gave way, and his heart declared in favour of her ſincerity. Yet even this conſideration aggravated the ſenſe of his loſs, and he was in danger of relapſing

lapſing into his former diſtraction, when his paſſion was a little becalmed by the hope of ſeeing her again, either by accident, or in the courſe of a diligent and minute inquiry, which he forthwith reſolved to ſet on foot. He had reaſon to believe, that her own heart would eſpouſe his cauſe, in ſpite of her virtue's determination, and did not deſpair of meeting with the Capuchin, whoſe good offices he knew he could at any time command. Comforted with theſe reflexions, the tempeſt of his ſoul ſubſided. In leſs than two hours he joined his company, with an air of compoſure, and aſked the painter's forgiveneſs for the freedom he had taken; the cauſe of which he promiſed hereafter to explain. Pallet was glad of being reconciled on any terms to one whoſe countenance ſupported him in æquilibrio with his antagoniſt the doctor; and Mr. Jolter was rejoiced beyond meaſure at his pupil's recovery.

CHAP.

CHAP. LIX.

Peregrine *meets with Mrs.* Hornbeck, *and is conſo'ed for his loſs. His valet de chambre is embroiled with her duenna, whom, however, he finds means to appeaſe.*

EVERY thing having thus reſumed its natural channel, they dined together in great tranquillity. In the afternoon, Peregrine, on pretence of ſtaying at home to write letters, while his companions were at the coffee-houſe, ordered a coach to be called, and with his valet de chambre, who was the only perſon acquainted with the preſent ſtate of his thoughts, ſet out for the Promenade; to which all the ladies of faſhion reſort in the evening, during the ſummer ſeaſon, in hopes of ſeeing his fugitive among the reſt.

Having made a circuit round the walk, and narrowly obſerved every female in the place, he perceived, at ſome diſtance, the livery of Hornbeck upon a lacquey that ſtood at the back of a coach: upon which, he ordered his man to reconnoitre the ſaid carriage, while he pulled up his glaſſes, that he might not be diſcovered, before he ſhould have received ſome intelligence, by which he might conduct himſelf on this unexpected occaſion, that already began to interfere with the purpoſe of his coming thither, tho' it could not diſpute his attention with the idea of his charming unknown.

His mercury having made his obſervations, reported, that there was no body in the coach but Mrs. Hornbeck and an elderly woman, who had all the air of a duenna, and that the ſervant was not

not the ſame footman who had attended them in France. Encouraged by this information, our hero ordered himſelf to be driven cloſe up to that ſide of their convenience on which his old miſtreſs ſat; and accoſted her with the uſual ſalutation. This lady no ſooner beheld her gallant, than her cheeks reddened with a double glow; and ſhe exclaimed, "Dear brother, I'm overjoy'd to ſee you! Pray come into our coach." He took the hint immediately, and, complying with her requeſt, embraced this new ſiſter with great affection.

Perceiving that her attendant was very much ſurpriſed and alarmed at this unexpected meeting, ſhe, in order to baniſh her ſuſpicion, and, at the ſame time, give her lover his cue, told him that his brother (meaning her huſband) was gone to the Spa for a few weeks, by the advice of phyſicians, on account of his ill ſtate of health; and that, from his laſt letter, ſhe had the pleaſure to tell him, he was in a fair way of doing well. The young gentleman expreſſed his ſatisfaction at this piece of news; obſerving, with an air of fraternal concern, that if his brother had not made too free with his conſtitution, his friends in England would have had no occaſion to repine at his abſence and want of health, by which he was baniſhed from his own country and connexions. He then aſked, with an affectation of ſurpriſe, why ſhe had not accompanied her ſpouſe; and was given to underſtand, that his tenderneſs of affection would not ſuffer him to expoſe her to the fatigues of the journey, which lay among rocks that were almoſt inacceſſible.

The duenna's doubts being eaſed by this preamble of converſation, he changed the ſubject to

the pleaſures of the place; and, among other ſuch queſtions, inquired if ſhe had as yet viſited Verſailles? This is a publick-houſe, ſituated upon the canal, at the diſtance of about two miles from town, and accommodated with tolerable gardens for the entertainment of company. When ſhe replied in the negative, he propoſed to accompany her thither immediately; but the governante, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, objected to this propoſal; telling them, in broken Engliſh, that as the lady was under her care, ſhe could not anſwer to Mr. Hornbeck for allowing her to viſit ſuch a ſuſpicious place. "As for that matter, Madam (ſaid the confident gallant) give yourſelf no trouble, the conſequences ſhall be at my peril; and I will undertake to inſure you againſt my brother's reſentment." So ſaying, he directed the coachman to the place, and ordered his own to follow, under the auſpices of his valet de chambre, while the old gentlewoman, over-ruled by his aſſurance, quietly ſubmitted to his authority.

Being arrived at the place, he handed the ladies from the coach, and then, for the firſt time, obſerved that the duenna was lame, a circumſtance of which he did not ſcruple to take the advantage; for they had ſcarce alighted, and drank a glaſs of wine, when he adviſed his ſiſter to enjoy a walk in the garden: and although the attendant made ſhift to keep them almoſt always in view, they enjoyed a detached converſation, in which Peregrine learnt, that the true cauſe of her being left behind at Bruſſels, whilſt her huſband proceeded to Spa, was his dread of the company and familiarities of that place, to which his jealouſy durſt not expoſe her; and that ſhe had

had lived three weeks in a convent at Liſle, from which ſhe was delivered by his own free motion, becauſe indeed he could no longer exiſt without her company; and laſtly, our lover underſtood, that her governante was a mere dragon, who had been recommended to him by a Spaniſh merchant, whoſe wife ſhe attended to her dying day: but ſhe very much queſtioned whether or not her fidelity was proof enough againſt money and ſtrong waters. Peregrine aſſured her the experiment ſhould be tried before parting; and they agreed to paſs the night at Verſailles, provided his endeavours ſhould ſucceed.

Having exerciſed themſelves in this manner, until his duenna's ſpirits were pretty much exhauſted; that ſhe might be the better diſpoſed to recruit them with a glaſs of liqueur, they returned to their apartment, and the cordial was recommended and received in a bumper: but as it did not produce ſuch a viſible alteration as the ſanguine hopes of Pickle had made him expect, and the old gentlewoman obſerved that it began to be late, and that the gates would be ſhut in a little time, he filled up a parting glaſs, and pledged her in equal quantity. Her blood was too much chilled to be warmed even by this extraordinary doſe, which made immediate innovation in the brain of our youth, who in the gaiety of his imagination overwhelmed this She-Argus with ſuch profuſion of gallantry, that ſhe was more intoxicated with his expreſſions than with the ſpirits ſhe had drank. When in the courſe of toying he dropt a purſe into her boſom, ſhe ſeemed to forget how the night wore, and with the approbation of her charge, aſſented to his propoſal of having ſomething for ſupper.

This was a great point which our adventurer had gained, and yet he plainly perceived that the governante miſtook his meaning, by giving herſelf credit for all the paſſion he had profeſſed. As this error could be rectified by no other means than thoſe of plying her with the bottle, until her diſtinguiſhing faculties ſhould be overpowered, he promoted a quick circulation. She did him juſtice, without any manifeſt ſigns of inebriation, ſo long, that his own eyes began to reel in the ſockets; and he found that before his ſcheme could be accompliſhed, he ſhould be effectually unfitted for all the purpoſes of love. He therefore had recourſe to his valet de chambre, who underſtood the hint as ſoon as it was given, and readily undertook to perform the part, of which his maſter had play'd the prelude. This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, and the night at odds with morning, he took an opportunity of imparting to the ear of this aged Dulcinea a kind whiſper, importing a promiſe of viſiting her, when his ſiſter ſhould be retired to her own chamber, and an earneſt deſire of leaving her door unlocked.

This agreeable intimation being communicated, he conveyed a caution of the ſame nature to Mrs. Hornbeck, as he led her to her apartment; and darkneſs and ſilence no ſooner prevailed in the houſe, than he and his truſty ſquire ſet out on their different voyages. Every thing would have ſucceeded according to their wiſh, had not the valet de chambre ſuffered himſelf to fall aſleep at the ſide of his inamorata, and in the agitation of a violent dream, exclaimed in a voice ſo unlike that of her ſuppoſed adorer, that ſhe diſtinguiſhed the difference at once. Waking him with

with a pinch and a loud ſhriek, ſhe threatened to proſecute him for a rape, and reviled him with all the epithets her rage and diſappointment could ſuggeſt.

The Frenchman finding himſelf detected, behaved with great temper and addreſs: he begg'd ſhe would compoſe herſelf, on account of her own reputation, which was extremely dear to him; proteſting, that he had a moſt inviolable eſteem for her perſon. His repreſentations had weight with the duenna, who, upon recollection, comprehended the whole affair, and thought it would be her intereſt to bring matters to an accommodation. She therefore admitted the apologies of her bedfellow, provided he would promiſe to attone by marriage for the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; and in this particular he ſet her heart at eaſe by repeated vows, which he uttered with ſurpriſing volubility, though without any intention to perform the leaſt tittle of their contents.

Peregrine, who had been alarmed by her exclamation, and run to the door with a view of interpoſing, according to the emergency of the caſe, over-hearing the affair thus compromiſed, returned to his miſtreſs, who was highly entertained with an account of what had paſſed, foreſeeing, that for the future ſhe ſhould be under no difficulty or reſtriction from the ſeverity of her guard.

CHAP. LX.

Hornbeck *is informed of his wife's adventure with* Peregrine, *for whom he prepares a ſtratagem which is rendered ineffectual by the information of* Pipes. *The huſband is ducked for his intention, and our hero apprehended by the patrol*

THERE was another perſon, however, ſtill ungained; and that was no other than her footman, whoſe ſecrecy our hero attempted to ſecure in the morning by an handſome preſent, which he received with many profeſſions of gratitude and devotion to his ſervice; yet this complaiſance was nothing but a cloak uſed to diſguiſe the deſign he harboured of making his maſter acquainted with the whole tranſaction. Indeed this lacquey had been hired, not only as a ſpy upon his miſtreſs, but alſo as a check on the conduct of the governante, with promiſe of ample reward, if ever he ſhould diſcover any ſiniſter or ſuſpicious practices in the courſe or their behaviour. As for the footman whom they had brought from England, he was retained in attendance upon the perſon of his maſter, whoſe confidence he had loſt, by adviſing him to gentle methods of reclaiming his lady, when her irregularities had ſubjected her to his wrath.

The Flemiſh valet, in conſequence of the office he had undertaken, wrote to Hornbeck by the firſt poſt, giving an exact detail of the adventure at Verſailles, with ſuch a deſcription of the pretended brother, as left the huſband no room to think he could be any other perſon than his firſt diſhonourer; and exaſperated him to ſuch a de-

a degree, that he reſolved to lay an ambuſh for this invader, and at once diſqualify him from diſturbing his repoſe, by maintaining further correſpondence with his wife.

Mean while the lovers enjoyed themſelves without reſtraint, and Peregrine's plan of enquiry after his dear Unknown was for the preſent poſtponed. His fellow-travellers were confounded at his myſterious motions, which filled the heart of Jolter with anxiety and terror. This careful conductor was fraught with ſuch experience of his pupil's diſpoſition, that he trembled with the apprehenſion of ſome ſudden accident, and lived in continual alarm, like a man that walks under the wall of a nodding tower. Nor did he enjoy any alleviation of his fears, when, upon telling the young gentleman, that the reſt of the company were deſirous of departing for Antwerp, he anſwered, they were at liberty to conſult their own inclinations; but for his own part, he was reſolved to ſtay in Bruſſels a few days longer. By this declaration the governor was confirmed in the opinion of his having ſome intrigue upon the anvil. In the bitterneſs of his vexation, he took the liberty of ſignifying his ſuſpicion, and reminding him of the dangerous dilemmas to which he had been reduced by his former precipitation.

Peregrine took his caution in good part, and promiſed to behave with ſuch circumſpection as would ſcreen him from any troubleſome conſequences for the future: but, nevertheleſs, behaved that ſame evening in ſuch a manner, as plainly ſhewed, that his prudence was nothing elſe than vain ſpeculation. He had made an appointment to ſpend the night, as uſual, with Mrs. Hornbeck; and about nine o'clock haſtened

to her lodgings, when he was accoſted in the ſtreet by his old diſcarded friend Thomas Pipes, who, without any other preamble, told him, that for all he had turned him adrift, he did not chooſe to ſee him run full ſail into his enemy's harbour, without giving him timely notice of the danger. "I'll tell you what, (ſaid he) mayhap you think I want to curry favour, that I may be taken in tow again; if you do, you have made a miſtake in your reckoning. I am old enough to be laid up, and have wherewithal to keep my planks from the weather. But this here is the affair; I have known you ſince you were no higher than a marlinſpike, and ſhouldn't care to ſee you deprived of your rigging at theſe years: whereby I am informed by Hornbeck's man, whom I this afternoon fell in with by chance, as how his maſter has got intelligence of your boarding his wife, and has ſteered privately into this port, with a large complement of hands, in order, d'ye ſee, to ſecure you while you are under the hatches. Now if ſo be as how you have a mind to give him a ſalt eel for his ſupper, here am I without hope of fee or reward, ready to ſtand by you as long as my timbers will ſtick together; and if I expect any recompence, may I be bound to eat oakum and drink bilge water for life."

Startled at this information, Peregrine examined him upon the particulars of his diſcourſe with the lacquey; and when he underſtood that Hornbeck's intelligence flowed from the canal of his Flemiſh footman, he believed every circumſtance of Tom's report, thanked him for this warning, and after having reprimanded him for his miſbehaviour at Liſle, aſſured him that it ſhould be his own fault if ever they ſhould part again.

again. He then deliberated with himſelf whether or not he ſhould retort the purpoſe upon his adverſary; but, when he conſidered that Hornbeck was not the aggreſſor, and made that unhappy huſband's caſe his own, he could not help acquitting his intention of revenge; though, in his opinion, it ought to have been executed in a more honourable manner; and therefore he determined to chaſtiſe him for his want of ſpirit. Nothing ſurely can be more inſolent and unjuſt than this determination, which induced him to puniſh a perſon, for his want of courage to redreſs the injury which he himſelf had done to his reputation and peace; and yet this barbarity of deciſion is authorized by the opinion and practice of mankind.

With theſe ſentiments he returned to the inn, and putting a pair of piſtols in his pocket, ordered his valet de chambre and Pipes to follow him at a ſmall diſtance, ſo as that they ſhould be within call in caſe of neceſſity, then poſted himſelf within thirty yards of his Dulcinea's door. There he had not been above half an hour, when he perceived four men take their ſtation on the other ſide, with a view, as he gueſſed, to watch for his going in, that he might be taken unaware. But when they had tarried a conſiderable time in that corner, without reaping the fruits of their expectation, their leader, perſuaded that the gallant had gained admittance by ſome ſecret means, approached the door with his followers, who, according to the inſtructions they had received, no ſooner ſaw it opened, than they ruſhed in, leaving their employer in the ſtreet, where he thought his perſon would be leaſt endangered. Our adventurer ſeeing him alone, advanced with ſpeed, and clapping a piſtol to his breaſt, com-

manded him to follow his footſteps, without noiſe, on pain of immediate death.

Terrified at this ſudden apparition, Hornbeck obeyed in ſilence; and in a few minutes they arrived at the quay, where Pickle halting, gave him to underſtand that he was no ſtranger to his villainous deſign. Told him that if he conceived himſelf injured by any circumſtance of his conduct, he would now give him an opportunity of reſenting the wrong, in a manner becoming a man of honour. "You have a ſword about you, (ſaid he) or if you don't chooſe to put the affair on that iſſue, here is a brace of piſtols, take which you pleaſe." Such an addreſs could not fail to diſconcert a man of his character. After ſome heſitation, he in a faultering accent denied that his deſign was to mutilate Mr. Pickle, but that he thought himſelf entitled to the benefit of the law, by which he would have obtained a divorce, if he could have procured evidence of his wife's infidelity; and with that view he had employed people to take advantage of the information he had received. With regard to his alternative, he declined it intirely, becauſe he could not ſee what ſatisfaction he ſhould enjoy, in being ſhot through the head, or run through the lungs, by a perſon who had already wronged him in an irreparable manner. Laſtly, his fear made him propoſe, that the affair ſhould be left to the arbitration of two creditable men, altogether unconcerned in the diſpute.

To theſe remonſtrances, Peregrine replied, in the ſtyle of a hot-headed young man, conſcious of his own unjuſtifiable behaviour, that every gentleman ought to be a judge of his own honour; and therefore he would ſubmit to the deciſion

ciſion of no umpire whatſoever; that he would forgive his want of courage, which might be a natural infirmity, but his mean diſſimulation he could not pardon: that, as he was certified of the raſcay llintent of his ambuſcade, by undoubted intelligence, he would treat him, not with a retaliation of his own treachery, but with ſuch indignity as a ſcoundrel deſerves to ſuffer; unleſs he would make one effort to maintain the character he aſſumed in life; ſo ſaying, he again preſented his piſtol, which being rejected as before, he called his two miniſters, and ordered them to duck him in the canal.

This command was pronounced and executed almoſt in the ſame breath, to the unſpeakable terror and diſorder of the poor ſhivering patient, who, having undergone the immerſion, ran about like a drowned rat, ſqueaking for aſſiſtance and revenge. His cries were overheard by the patrole, which, chancing to paſs that way, took him under their protection, and, in conſequence of his complaint and information, went in purſuit of our adventurer and his attendants, who were ſoon overtaken and ſurrounded. Raſh and inconſiderate as the young gentleman was, he did not pretend to ſtand upon the defenſive, againſt a file of muſketeers, although Pipes had drawn his cutlaſs at their approach, but ſurrendered himſelf without oppoſition, and was conveyed to the main guard, where the commanding officer, engaged by his appearance and addreſs, treated him with all imaginable reſpect. Hearing the particulars of his adventure, he aſſured him, that the prince would conſider the whole as a *Tour de jeuneſſe*, and order him to be releaſed without delay.

Next morning, when this gentlemen gave in his report, he made ſuch a favourable repreſentation of the priſoner, that our hero was on the point of being diſcharged; when Hornbeck preferred a complaint, accuſing him of a purpoſed aſſaſſination, and praying that ſuch puniſhment ſhould be inflicted upon him, as his highneſs ſhould think adequate to the nature of the crime. The prince, perplexed with this petition, in conſequence of which he foreſaw, that he muſt diſoblige a Britiſh ſubject, ſent for the plaintiff, of whom he had ſome knowledge, and in perſon exhorted him to drop the proſecution, which would only ſerve to propagate his own ſhame. But Hornbeck was too much incenſed to liſten to any propoſal of that kind, and peremptorily demanded juſtice againſt the priſoner, whom he repreſented as an obſcure adventurer, who had made repeated attempts upon his honour and his life. Prince Charles told him that what he had adviſed was in the capacity of a friend, but, ſince he inſiſted upon his acting as a magiſtrate, the affair ſhould be examined, and determined according to the dictates of juſtice and truth.

The petitioner being diſmiſſed with this promiſe, the defendant was in his turn brought before the judge, whoſe prepoſſeſſion in his favour was in a great meaſure weakened by what his antagoniſt had ſaid to the prejudice of his birth and reputation.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXI.

Peregrine *is releaſed.* Jolter *confounded at his myſterious conduct.* *A conteſt happens between the poet and painter, who are reconciled by the mediation of their fellow travellers.*

OUR hero, underſtanding from ſome expreſſions which eſcaped the prince, that he was conſidered in the light of a ſharper and aſſaſſin, begged that he might have the liberty of ſending for ſome vouchers, that would probably vindicate his character from the malicious aſperſions of his adverſary. This permiſſion being granted, he wrote a letter to his governor, deſiring that he would bring to him the letters of recommendation which he had received from the Britiſh embaſſador at Paris, and ſuch other papers as he thought conducive to evince the importance of his ſituation.

The billet was given in charge to one of the ſubaltern officers on duty, who carried it to the inn, and demanded to ſpeak with Mr. Jolter. Pallet, who happened to be at the door, when this meſſenger arrived, and heard him enquire for the tutor, ran directly to that gentleman's apartment, and in manifeſt diſorder told him that a huge fellow of a ſoldier, with a monſtrous pair of whiſkers, and a fur cap, as big as a buſhel, was aſking for him at the door. The poor governor began to ſhake at this intimation, though he was not conſcious of having committed any thing that could attract the attention of the ſtate. When the officer appeared at his chamber-door, his confuſion increaſed to ſuch a degree, that his perception ſeemed to vaniſh, and the ſubaltern

repeated the purport of his errand three times, before he could comprehend his meaning, or venture to receive the letter which he preſented. At length, he ſummoned all his fortitude, and having peruſed the epiſtle, his terror ſunk into anxiety. His ingenious fear immediately ſuggeſted, that Peregrine was confined in a dungeon, for ſome outrage he had committed. He ran with great agitation to a trunk, and taking out a bundle of papers, followed his conductor, being attended by the painter, to whom he had hinted his apprehenſion. When they paſſed through the guard which was under arms, the hearts of both died within them, and when they came into the preſence, there was ſuch an expreſſion of awful horror on the countenance of Jolter, that the prince obſerving his diſmay, was pleaſed to encourage him with an aſſurance, that he had nothing to fear. Thus comforted, he recollected himſelf ſo well as to underſtand his pupil, when he deſired him to produce the Embaſſador's letters; ſome of which being open, were immediately read by his highneſs, who was perſonally acquainted with the writer, and knew ſeveral of the noblemen to whom they were addreſſed. Theſe recommendations were ſo warm, and repreſented the young gentleman in ſuch an advantageous light, that the prince, convinced of the injuſtice his character had ſuffered by the miſrepreſentation of Hornbeck, took our hero by the hand, aſked pardon for the doubts he had entertained of his honour, declared him from that moment at liberty, ordered his domeſticks to be enlarged, and offered him his countenance and protection, as long as he ſhould remain in the Auſtrian Netherlands. At the ſame time, he cau-

cautioned him againſt indiſcretion in the courſe of his gallantries; and took his word and honour, that he ſhould drop all meaſures of reſentment againſt the perſon of Hornbeck, during his reſidence in that place.

The delinquent, thus honourably acquitted, thanked the prince in the moſt reſpectful manner, for his generoſity and candour, and retired with his two friends, who were amazed and bewildered in their thoughts, at what they had ſeen and heard, the whole adventure ſtill remaining without the ſphere of their comprehenſion, which was not at all enlarged by the unaccountable appearance of Pipes, who, with the valet de chambre, joined them at the caſtle gate. Had Jolter been a man of a luxuriant imagination, his brain would undoubtedly have ſuffered in the inveſtigation of his pupil's myſterious conduct, which he ſtrove in vain to unravel; but his intellects were too ſolid to be affected by the miſcarriage of his invention; and as Peregrine did not think proper to make him acquainted with the cauſe of his being apprehended, he contented himſelf with ſuppoſing, that there was a lady in the caſe.

The painter, whoſe imagination was of a more flimſy texture, formed a thouſand chimerical conjectures, which he communicated to Pickle, in imperfect inſinuations; hoping, by his anſwers and behaviour, to diſcover the truth; but the youth, in order to tantalize him, eluded all his enquiries, with ſuch appearance of induſtry and art, as heightened his curioſity, while it diſappointed his aim, and inflamed him to ſuch a degree of impatience, that his wits began to be unſettled. Then Peregrine was fain to recompoſe his brain, by telling him in confidence, that he had

had been arreſted as a ſpy. This ſecret he found more intolerable than his former uncertainty; he ran from one apartment to another, like a gooſe in the agonies of egg-laying, with intention of diſburdening this important load; but, Jolter being engaged with his pupil, and all the people of the houſe ignorant of the only language he could ſpeak, he was compelled, with infinite reluctance, to addreſs himſelf to the doctor, who was at that time ſhut up in his own chamber. Having knocked at the door to no purpoſe, he peeped through the key-hole, and ſaw the phyſician ſitting at a table, with a pen in one hand, and paper before him, his head reclined upon his other hand, and his eyes fixed upon the ceiling, as if he had been intranced. Pallet, concluding that he was under the power of ſome convulſion, endeavoured to force the door open; and the noiſe of his efforts recalled the doctor from his reverie. This poetical republican, being ſo diſagreeably diſturbed, ſtarted up in a paſſion, and opening the door, no ſooner perceived who had interrupted him, than he flung it in his face with great fury, and curſed him for his impertinent intruſion, which had deprived him of the moſt delightful viſion that ever regaled the human fancy. He imagined (as he afterwards imparted to Peregrine,) that as he enjoyed himſelf in walking thro' the flowery plain that borders on Parnaſſus, he was met by a venerable ſage, whom, by a certain divine vivacity that lightened from his eyes, he inſtantly knew to be the immortal Pindar. He was immediately ſtruck with reverence and awe, and proſtrated himſelf before the apparition, which taking him by the hand, lifted him gently from the ground; and, with words more ſweet

than

than the honey of the Hybla bees, told him, that of all the moderns, he alone was viſited by that celeſtial impulſe by which himſelf had been inſpired, when he produced his moſt applauded odes. So ſaying, he led him up the ſacred hill, perſuaded him to drink a copious draught of the waters of the Hippocrene, and then preſented him to the harmonious nine, who crowned his temples with a laurel-wreath.

No wonder that he was enraged to find himſelf cut off from ſuch ſublime ſociety. He raved in Greek againſt the invader, who was ſo big with his own purpoſe, that, unmindful of the diſgrace he had ſuſtained, and diſregarding all the ſymptoms of the phyſician's diſpleaſure, he applied his mouth to the door, in an eager tone, "I'll hold you any wager (ſaid he) that I gueſs the true cauſe of Mr. Pickle's impriſonment." To this challenge he received no reply; and therefore repeated it, adding, "I ſuppoſe you imagine he was taken up for fighting a duel, or affronting a nobleman, or lying with ſome man's wife, or ſome ſuch matter; but, egad! you was never more miſtaken in your life; and I'll lay my Cleopatra againſt your Homer's head, that in four and twenty hours you ſhan't light on the true reaſon."

The favourite of the muſes, exaſperated at this vexatious perſeverance of the painter, who he imagined had come to teize and inſult him, "I would (ſaid he) ſacrifice a cock to Æſculapius, were I aſſured that any perſon had been taken up for extirpating ſuch a troubleſome Goth as you are from the face of the earth. As for your boaſted Cleopatra, which you ſay was drawn from your own wife, I believe the copy has as much

of

of the το καλον, as the original. But, were it mine it ſhould be hung up in the temple of Cloacina, as the picture of that goddeſs; for any other apartment would be diſgraced by its appearance. "" Heark ye, Sir, (replied Pallet, inraged in his turn at this contemptuous mention of his darling performance) you may make as free with my wife at you think proper; but 'ware my works; thoſe are the children of my fancy, conceived by the glowing imagination, and formed by the art of my own hands: and you yourſelf are a Goth, and a Turk, and a Tartar, and an impudent pretending jackanapes, to treat with ſuch diſreſpect a production which, in the opinion of all the connoiſſeurs of the age, will, when finiſhed, be a maſter-piece in its kind, and do honour to human genius and ſkill. So I ſay again and again, (and I care not though your friend Playtor heard me) that you have no more taſte than a drayman's horſe, and that thoſe fooliſh notions of the ancients ought to be drubb'd out of you with a good cudgel, that you might learn to treat men of parts with more veneration. Perhaps you may not always be in the company of one who will hollow for aſſiſtance, when you are on the brink of being chaſtiſed for your inſolence, as I did, when you brought upon yourſelf the reſentment of that Scot, who, by the Lard! would have paid you both ſcot and lot, as Falſtaff ſays, if the French officer had not put him in arreſt."

The phyſician, to this declamation, which was conveyed through the key-hole, anſwered, that he (the painter) was a fellow ſo infinitely below his conſideration, that his conſcience upbraided him with no action of his life, except that of

chooſing

chooſing ſuch a wretch for his companion and fellow-traveller. That he had viewed his character through the medium of good nature and compaſſion, which had prompted him to give Pallet an opportunity of acquiring ſome new ideas under his immediate inſtruction; but he had abuſed his goodneſs and condeſcenſion in ſuch a flagrant manner, that he was now determined to diſcard him intirely from his acquaintance, and deſired him, for the preſent, to take himſelf away, on pain of being kicked for his preſumption.

Pallet was too much incenſed to be intimidated by this threat, which he retorted with great virulence, defying him to come forth, that it might appear which of them was beſt ſkilled in that pedeſtrian exerciſe, which he immediately began to practice againſt the door with ſuch thundering application, as reached the ears of Pickle and his governor, who coming out into the paſſage, and ſeeing him thus employed, aſked if he had forgot the chamber-pots of Aloſt, that he ventured to behave in ſuch a manner, as intitled him to a ſecond preſcription of the ſame nature.

The doctor underſtanding that there was company at hand, opened the door in a twinkling; and ſpringing upon his antagoniſt, like a tyger, a fierce contention would have enſued, to the infinite ſatisfaction of our hero, had not Jolter, to the manifeſt peril of his own perſon, interpoſed, and partly by force, and partly by exhortations, put a ſtop to the engagement before it was fairly begun. After having demonſtrated the indecency of ſuch a vulgar rencounter betwixt two fellow-citizens in a foreign land, he begg'd to know the cauſe of their diſſention, and offered his good offices towards an accommodation. Peregrine alſo,

ſeeing

ſeeing the fray was finiſhed, expreſt himſelf to the ſame purpoſe; and the painter, for obvious reaſons, declining an explanation, his antagoniſt told the youth what a mortifying interruption he had ſuffered by the impertinent intruſion of Pallet, and gave him a detail of the particulars of his viſion, as above recited. The arbiter owned, the provocation was not to be endured; and decreed, that the offender ſhould make ſome attonement for his tranſgreſſion. Upon which, the painter obſerved, that howſoever he might have been diſpoſed to make acknowledgments, if the phyſician had ſignified his diſpleaſure like a gentleman, the complainant had now forfeited all claim to any ſuch conceſſions, by the vulgar manner in which he had reviled him and his productions; obſerving that if he (the painter) had been inclined to retort his ſlandrous inſinuations, the republican's own works would have afforded ample ſubject for his ridicule and cenſure.

After divers diſputes and repreſentations, peace was at length concluded, on condition, that, for the future, the doctor ſhould never mention Cleopatra, unleſs he could ſay ſomething in her praiſe; and that Pallet, in conſideration of his having been the firſt aggreſſor, ſhould make a ſketch of the phyſician's viſion, to be engraved and prefixed to the next edition of his odes.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXII.

The travellers depart for Antwerp, *at which place the painter gives a looſe to his enthuſiaſm.*

OUR adventurer, baffled in all his efforts to retrieve his loſt Amanda, yielded at length to the remonſtrances of his governor and fellow-travellers, who, out of pure complaiſance to him, had exceeded their intended ſtay by ſix days at leaſt: and a couple of poſt-chaiſes, with three riding-horſes, being hired, they departed from Bruſſels in the morning, dined at Mechlin, and arrived about eight in the evening at the venerable city of Antwerp. During this day's journey, Pallet was elevated to an uncommon flow of ſpirits, with the proſpect of ſeeing the birth-place of Rubens, for whom he profeſſed an enthuſiaſtic admiration. He ſwore, that the pleaſure he felt was equal to that of a Muſſulman, on the laſt day of his pilgrimage to Mecca; and that he already conſidered himſelf a native of Antwerp, being ſo intimately acquainted with their ſo juſtly boaſted citizen, from whom, at certain junctures, he could not help believing himſelf derived, becauſe his own pencil adopted the manner of that great man with ſurpriſing facility, and his face wanted nothing but a pair of whiſkers and a beard to exhibit the expreſs image of the Fleming's countenance. He told them he was ſo proud of this reſemblance, that, in order to render it more ſtriking, he had at one time of his life reſolved to keep his face ſacred from the razor; and in that purpoſe had perſevered, notwithſtanding the continual reprehenſions of Mrs. Pallet,

Pallet, who being then with child, ſaid, his aſpect was ſo hideous, that ſhe dreaded a miſcarriage every hour, until ſhe threatned, in plain terms, to diſpute the ſanity of his intellects, and apply to the chancellor for a committee.

The doctor, on this occaſion, obſerved, that a man who is not proof againſt the ſolicitations of a woman, can never expect to make a great figure in life; that painters and poets ought to cultivate no wives but the muſes; or if they are, by the accidents of fortune, incumbered with families, they ſhould carefully guard againſt that pernicious weakneſs, falſely honoured with the appellation of *natural affection*, and pay no manner of regard to the impertinent cuſtoms of the world. "Granting that you had been, for a ſhort time, deemed a lunatic (ſaid he) you might have acquitted yourſelf honourably of that imputation, by ſome performance that would have raiſed your character above all cenſure. Sophocles himſelf, that celebrated tragic poet, who, for the ſweetneſs of his verſification, was ſtiled μέλιτ]α, or *the bee*, in his old age ſuffered the ſame accuſation from his own children, who ſeeing him neglect his family affairs, and devote himſelf intirely to poetry, carried him before the magiſtrate, as a man whoſe intellects were ſo much impaired by the infirmities of age, that he was no longer fit to manage his domeſtic concerns; upon which the reverend bard produced his tragedy of Οιδιπους επι κολωνω, as a work he had juſt finiſhed; which being peruſed, inſtead of being declared unſound of underſtanding, he was diſmiſſed with admiration and applauſe. I wiſh your beard and whiſkers had been ſanctioned by the like authority; though I am afraid you would have been in the predica-

predicament of thoſe diſciples of a certain philoſopher, who drank decoctions of cummin ſeeds, that their faces might adopt the paleneſs of their maſter's complexion, hoping, that in being as wan, they would be as learned as their teacher." The painter, ſtung with this ſarcaſm, replied, "or like thoſe Virtuoſi, who by repeating Greek, eating ſillikickaby, and pretending to ſee viſions, think they equal the ancients in taſte and genius." The phyſician retorted, Pallet rejoined, and the altercation continued, until they entered the gates of Antwerp, when the admirer of Rubens broke forth into a rapturous exclamation, which put an end to the diſpute, and attracted the notice of the inhabitants, many of whom, by ſhrugging up their ſhoulders, and pointing to their foreheads, gave ſhrewd indications, that they believed him a poor gentleman diſordered in his brain.

They had no ſooner alighted at the inn, than this pſeudo-enthuſiaſt propoſed to viſit the great church, in which he had been informed ſome of his maſter's pieces were to be ſeen; and was remarkably chagrined, when he underſtood that he could not be admitted till next day. He roſe next morning by day-break, and diſturbed his fellow-travellers in ſuch a noiſy and clamorous manner, that Peregrine determined to puniſh him with ſome new infliction; and while he put on his cloaths, actually formed the plan of promoting a duel between him and the doctor; in the management of which, he promiſed himſelf ſtore of entertainment, from the behaviour of both.

Being provided with one of thoſe domeſtics who are always in waiting to offer their ſervices to ſtrangers on their firſt arrival, they were conducted

ducted to the house of a gentleman who had an excellent collection of pictures; and though the greatest part of them were painted by his favourite artist, Pallet condemned them all by the lump, because Pickle had told him beforehand, that there was not one performance of Rubens among the number.

The next place they visited, was what is called the academy of painting, furnished with a number of paultry pieces, in which our painter recognized the stile of Peter Paul, with many expressions of admiration, on the same sort of previous intelligence.

From this repository, they went to the great church; and being led to the tomb of Rubens, the whimsical painter fell upon his knees, and worshipped, with such appearance of devotion, that the attendant, scandalized at his superstition, pulled him up; observing, with great warmth, that the person buried in that place was no saint, but as great a sinner as himself; and that if he was spiritually disposed, there was a chapel of the Blessed Virgin, at the distance of three yards on the right hand, to which he might retire. He thought it was incumbent upon him to manifest some extraordinary inspiration, while he resided on the spot where Rubens was born; and therefore his whole behaviour was an affectation of rapture, expressed in distracted exclamations, convulsive starts, and uncouth gesticulations. In the midst of his frantic behaviour, he saw an old Capuchin with a white beard, mount the pulpit, and hold forth to the congregation with such violence of emphasis and gesture, as captivated his fancy; and bawling aloud, "Zounds! what an excellent Paul preaching at Athens!" he pull-

ed a pencil and a ſmall memorandum-book from his pocket, and began to take a ſketch of the orator, with great eagerneſs and agitation, ſaying, "Egad! friend Raphael, we ſhall ſee whether you or I have got the beſt knack at trumping up an Apoſtle." This appearance of diſreſpect gave offence to the audience, which began to murmur againſt this heretic libertine; when one of the prieſts belonging to the choir, in order to prevent any ill conſequence from their diſpleaſure, came and told him in the French language, that ſuch liberties were not permitted in their religion, and adviſed him to lay aſide his implements, leſt the people ſhould take umbrage at his deſign, and be provoked to puniſh him as a profane ſcoffer at their worſhip.

The painter ſeeing himſelf addreſſed by a friar who, while he ſpoke, bowed with great complaiſance, imagined that he was a begging brother, come to ſupplicate his charity; and his attention being quite ingroſſed by the deſign he was making, he patted the prieſt's ſhaven crown with his hand; ſaying, *Oter tems, oter tems*; and then reſumed his pencil with great earneſtneſs. The eccleſiaſtic perceiving that the ſtranger did not comprehend his meaning, pulled him by the ſleeve, and explained himſelf in the Latin tongue: upon which Pallet, provoked at his intruſion, curſed him aloud for an impudent beggarly ſon of a whore; and taking out a ſhilling, flung it upon the pavement, with manifeſt ſigns of indignation.

Some of the common people, enraged to ſee their religion contemned, and their prieſts inſulted at the very altar, roſe from their ſeats; and ſurrounding the aſtoniſhed painter, one of the number ſnatched his book from his hand, and

tore

tore it into a thouſand pieces. Frightened as he was, he could not help crying, "Fire and faggots! all my favourite ideas are gone to wreck!" and was in danger of being very roughly handled by the croud, had not Peregrine ſtepped in, and aſſured them, that he was a poor unhappy gentleman, who laboured under a tranſport of the brain. Thoſe who underſtood the French language communicated this information to the reſt; ſo that he eſcaped without any other chaſtiſement, than that of being obliged to retire. And as they could not ſee the famous deſcent from the croſs till after the ſervice was finiſhed, they were conducted by their domeſtique to the houſe of a painter, where they found a beggar ſtanding for his picture, and the artiſt actually employed in repreſenting a huge louſe that crawled upon his ſhoulder. Pallet was wonderfully pleaſed with this circumſtance, which he ſaid was altogether a new thought, and an excellent hint, of which he would make his advantage: and in the courſe of his ſurvey of this Fleming's performances, perceiving a piece in which two flies were engaged upon the carcaſs of a dog half devoured, he ran to his brother bruſh, and ſwore he was worthy of being a fellow-citizen of the immortal Rubens. He then lamented, with many expreſſions of grief and reſentment, that he had loſt his common place-book, in which he had preſerved a thouſand conceptions of the ſame ſort, formed by the accidental objects of his ſenſes and imagination; and took an opportunity of telling his fellow-travellers, that in execution he had equalled, if not excelled, the two antient painters who vied with each other in the repreſentation of a curtain and a bunch of grapes; for he had exhibited

hibited the image of a certain object ſo like to nature, that the bare ſight of it ſet a whole hog-ſty in an uproar.

When he had examined and applauded all the productions of this minute artiſt, they returned to the great church, and were entertained with the view of that celebrated maſter-piece of Rubens, in which he has introduced the portraits of himſelf and his whole family. The doors that conceal this capital performance were no ſooner unfolded than our enthuſiaſt, debarred the uſe of ſpeech, by a previous covenant with his friend Pickle, lifted up his hands and eyes, and putting himſelf in the attitude of Hamlet, when his father's ghoſt appears, adored in ſilent extaſy and awe. He even made a merit of neceſſity; and when they had withdrawn from the place, proteſted that his whole faculties were ſwallowed up in love and admiration. He now profeſſed himſelf more than ever enamoured of the Flemiſh ſchool, raved in extravagant encomiums, and propoſed, that the whole company ſhould pay homage to the memory of the divine Rubens, by repairing forthwith to the houſe in which he lived, and proſtrating themſelves on the floor of his painting room.

As there was nothing remarkable in the tenement, which had been rebuilt more than once ſince the death of that great man, Peregrine excuſed himſelf from complying with the propoſal; on pretence of being fatigued with the circuit they had already performed. Jolter declined it for the ſame reaſon; and the queſtion being put to the doctor, he refuſed his company with an air of diſdain. Pallet, piqued at his contemptuous manner, aſked if he would not go and ſee the

habitation of Pindoor, provided he was in the city where that poet lived? And when the phyſician obſerved, that there was an infinite difference between the men; "That I'll allow, (replied the painter) for the devil a poet ever lived in Greece or Troy, that was worthy to clean the pencils of our beloved Rubens." The phyſician could not with any degree of temper and forbearance hear this outrageous blaſphemy, for which, he ſaid, Pallet's eyes ought to be picked out by owls: and the diſpute aroſe, as uſual, to ſuch ſcurrilities of language and indecency of behaviour, that paſſengers began to take notice of their animoſity; and Peregrine was obliged to interpoſe, for his own credit.

CHAP. LXIII.

Peregrine *artfully foments a quarrel between* Pallet *and the phyſician, who fight a duel on the ramparts.*

THE painter betook himſelf to the houſe of the Flemiſh Raphael, and the reſt of the company went back to their lodgings; where the young gentleman, taking the advantage of being alone with the phyſician, recapitulated all the affronts he had ſuſtained from the painter's petulance, aggravating every circumſtance of the diſgrace, and adviſing him, in the capacity of a friend, to take care of his honour, which could not fail to ſuffer in the opinion of the world, if he allowed himſelf to be inſulted with impunity,

by

by one ſo much his inferior in every degree of conſideration.

The phyſician aſſured him, that Pallet had hitherto eſcaped chaſtiſement, by being deemed an object unworthy his reſentment, and in conſideration of the wretch's family, for which his compaſſion was intereſted; but, that repeated injuries would inflame the moſt benevolent diſpoſition: and although he could find no precedent of duelling among the Greeks and Romans, whom he conſidered as the patterns of demeanour, Pallet ſhould no longer avail himſelf of his veneration for the ancients, but be puniſhed for the very next offence he ſhould commit.

Having thus ſpirited up the doctor to a reſolution from which he could not decently ſwerve, our adventurer acted the incendiary with the other party alſo; giving him to underſtand, that the phyſician treated his character with ſuch contempt, and behaved to him with ſuch inſolence, as no gentleman ought to bear: that for his own part, he was every day put out of countenance by their mutual animoſity, which appeared in nothing but vulgar expreſſions, more becoming ſhoe-boys and oyſter-women than men of honour and education; and therefore he ſhould be obliged, contrary to his inclination, to break off all correſpondence with them both, if they would not fall upon ſome method to retrieve the dignity of their characters.

Theſe repreſentations would have had little effect upon the timidity of the painter, who was likewiſe too much of a Grecian to approve of ſingle combat, in any other way than that of boxing, an exerciſe in which he was well ſkill'd, had

not they been accompanied with an inſinuation, that his antagoniſt was no Hector, and that he might humble him into any conceſſion, without running the leaſt perſonal riſk. Animated by this aſſurance, our ſecond Rubens ſet the trumpet of defiance to his mouth, ſwore that he valued not his life a ruſh, when his honour was concerned, and intreated Mr. Pickle to be the bearer of a challenge, which he would inſtantly commit to writing.

The miſchievous fomentor highly applauded this manifeſtation of courage, by which he was at liberty to cultivate his friendſhip and ſociety; but declined the office of carrying the billet, that his tenderneſs of Pallet's reputation might not be miſinterpreted into an officious deſire of promoting quarrels. At the ſame time he recommended Tom Pipes, not only as a very proper meſſenger on this occaſion, but alſo as a truſty ſecond in the field. The magnanimous painter took his advice, and retiring to his chamber, penn'd a challenge in theſe terms.

"SIR,

WHEN I am heartily provoked, I fear not the devil himſelf; much leſs ——— I will not call you a pedantic coxcomb, nor an unmannerly fellow, becauſe theſe are the hippythets of the wulgar: but, remember, ſuch as you are, I neyther love you nor fear you; but, on the contrary, expect ſatisfaction for your audacious behaviour to me, on divers occaſions; and will, this evening, in the twilight, meet you on the ramparts with ſword and piſtol, where the

Lord

Lord have mercy on the ſoul of one of us; for your body ſhall find no favour with your incenſed defier, till death,

LAYMAN PALLET.

This reſolute defiance, after having been ſubmitted to the peruſal, and honoured with the approbation of our youth, was committed to the charge of Pipes, who, according to his orders, delivered it in the afternoon; and brought for anſwer, that the phyſician would attend him at the appointed time and place. The challenger was evidently diſcompoſed at the unexpected news of this acceptance, and ran about the houſe in great diſorder, in queſt of Peregrine, to beg his further advice and aſſiſtance; but underſtanding that the youth was engaged in private with his adverſary, he began to ſuſpect ſome colluſion, and curſed himſelf for his folly and precipitation. He even entertained ſome thoughts of retracting his invitation, and ſubmitting to the triumph of his antagoniſt: but, before he would ſtoop to this opprobrious cendeſcenſion, he reſolved to try another expedient which might be the means of ſaving both his character and perſon. In this hope he viſited Mr. Jolter, and very gravely deſired he would be ſo good as to undertake the office of his ſecond, in a duel which he was to fight that evening with the phyſician.

The governor, inſtead of anſwering his expectation, in expreſſing fear and concern, and breaking forth into exclamations of "Good God! gentlemen, what d'ye mean? You ſhall not murther one another while it is in my power to prevent your purpoſe. I will go directly to the governor of the place, who ſhall interpoſe his

authority." I ſay, inſtead of theſe and other friendly menaces of prevention, Jolter heard the propoſal with the moſt phlegmatic tranquillity, and excuſed himſelf from accepting the honour he intended for him, on account of his character and ſituation, which would not permit him to be concerned in any ſuch rencounters. Indeed this mortifying reception was owing to a previous hint from Peregrine, who dreading ſome ſort of interruption from his governor, had made him acquainted with his deſign, and aſſured him, that the affair ſhould not be brought to any dangerous iſſue.

Thus diſappointed, the dejected challenger was overwhelmed with perplexity and diſmay; and in the terrors of death or mutilation, reſolved to deprecate the wrath of his enemy, and conform to any ſubmiſſion he ſhould propoſe: when he was accidentally encountered by our adventurer, who with demonſtrations of infinite ſatisfaction, told him in confidence, that his billet had thrown the doctor into an agony of conſternation; that his acceptance of his challenge was a meer effort of deſpair, calculated to confound the ferocity of the ſender, and diſpoſe him to liſten to terms of accommodation: that he had imparted the letter to him with fear and trembling, on pretence of engaging him as a ſecond, but in reality, with a view of obtaining his good offices in promoting a reconciliation; "but, perceiving the ſituation of his mind, (added our hero) I thought it would be more for your honour to baffle his expectation; and therefore I readily undertook the taſk of attending him to the field, in full aſſurance, that he will there humble himſelf before you, even to proſtration. In this ſecurity, you

may

may go and prepare your arms, and beſpeak the aſſiſtance of Pipes, who will ſquire you in the field, while I keep myſelf up, that our correſpondence may not be ſuſpected by the phyſician." Pallet's ſpirits, that were ſunk to dejection, roſe at this encouragement to all the inſolence of triumph; he again declaring his contempt of danger, and his piſtols being loaded and accommodated with new flints, by his truſty armour-bearer, he waited, without flinching, for the hour of battle.

On the firſt approach of twilight, ſomebody knocked at his door, and Pipes having opened it at his deſire, he heard the voice of his antagoniſt pronounce, "Tell Mr. Pallet, that I am going to the place of appointment." The painter was not a little ſurprized at this anticipation, which ſo ill agreed with the information he had received from Pickle; and his concern beginning to recur, he fortified himſelf with a large bumper of brandy, which, however, did not overcome the anxiety of his thoughts. Nevertheleſs, he ſet out on the expedition with his ſecond, betwixt whom and himſelf the following dialogue paſſed, in their way to the ramparts. "Mr. Pipes, (ſaid the painter, with diſordered accent) methinks the doctor was in a peſtilent hurry with that meſſage of his." "Ey, ey, (anſwered Tom) I do ſuppoſe he longs to be foul of you." "What! (replied the other) d'ye think he thirſts after my blood?" "To be ſure a does," (ſaid Pipes, thruſting a large quid of tobacco in his cheek, with great deliberation.) "If that be the caſe, (cried Pallet, beginning to ſhake) he is no better than a Cannibal, and no Chriſtian ought to fight him on equal footing." Tom obſerving his

emotion, eyed him with a frown of indignation, ſaying, "You an't afraid, are you?" "God forbid! (replied the challenger, ſtammering with fear.) What ſhould I be afraid of? The worſt he can do is to take my life, and then he'll be anſwerable both to God and man for the murder: Don't you think he will?" "I think no ſuch matter, (anſwered the ſecond) if ſo be as how he puts a brace of bullets through your bows, and kills you fairly, it is no more murder than if I was to bring down a noddy from the main top-ſail-yard." By this time Pallet's teeth chattered with ſuch violence, that he could ſcarce pronounce this reply, "Mr. Thomas, you ſeem to make very light of a man's life; but I truſt in the Almighty, I ſhall not be ſo eaſily brought down. Sure many a man has fought a duel, without loſing his life. Do you imagine that I run ſuch a hazard of falling by the hand of my adverſary?" "You may, or you may not, (ſaid the unconcerned Pipes) juſt as it happens. What then? Death is a debt that every man owes, according to the ſong; and if you ſet foot to foot, I think one of you muſt go to pot." "Foot to foot! (exclaimed the terrified painter) that's downright butchery; and I'll be damn'd before I fight any man on earth in ſuch a barbarous way. What! d'ye take me to be a ſavage beaſt?" This declaration he made while they aſcended the ramparts. His attendant perceiving the phyſician and his ſecond at the diſtance of an hundred paces before them, gave him notice of their appearance, and adviſed him to make ready, and behave like a man. Pallet in vain endeavoured to conceal his pannic, which diſcovered itſelf in an univerſal trepidation of body, and the lamentable

mentable tone in which he anſwered this exhortation of Pipes, ſaying, "I do behave like a man; but you would have me act the part of a brute. Are they coming this way?" When Tom told him that they had faced about, and admoniſhed him to advance, the nerves of his arm refuſed their office, he could not hold out his piſtol, and inſtead of going forward, retreated with an inſenſibility of motion; till Pipes, placing himſelf in the rear, ſet his own back to that of his principal, and ſwore he ſhould not budge an inch farther in that direction.

While the valet thus tutored the painter, his maſter enjoyed the terrors of the phyſician, which were more ridiculous than thoſe of Pallet, becauſe he was more intent upon diſguiſing them. His declaration to Pickle in the morning, would not ſuffer him to ſtart any objections when he received the challenge; and finding that the young gentleman made no offer of mediating the affair, but rather congratulated him on the occaſion, when he communicated the painter's billet, all his efforts conſiſted in oblique hints, and general reflections upon the abſurdity of duelling, which was firſt introduced among civilized nations, by the barbarous Huns and Longobards. He likewiſe pretended to ridicule the uſe of fire-arms, which confounded all the diſtinctions of ſkill and addreſs, and deprived a combatant of the opportunity of ſignalizing his perſonal proweſs.

Pickle aſſented to the juſtneſs of his obſervations; but at the ſame time repreſented the neceſſity of complying with the cuſtoms of the world, (ridiculous as they were) on which a man's honour and reputation depend. So that, ſeeing no hopes of profiting by that artifice, the

republican's agitation became more and more remarkable; and he propoſed in plain terms, that they ſhould contend in armour, like the combatants of ancient days; for it was but reaſonable, that they ſhould practiſe the manner of fighting, ſince they adopted the diſpoſition of thoſe iron times.

Nothing could have afforded more diverſion to our hero, than the ſight of two ſuch duelliſts caſed in iron; and he wiſhed that he had promoted the quarrel in Bruſſels, where he could have hired the armour of Charles the fifth, and the valiant duke of Parma, for their accommodation: but as there was no poſſibility of furniſhing them cap-a-pee at Antwerp, he perſuaded him to conform to the modern uſe of the ſword, and meet the painter on his own terms; and ſuſpecting that his fear would ſupply him with other excuſes for declining the combat, he comforted him with ſome diſtant inſinuations to the prejudice of his adverſary's courage, which would, in all probability, evaporate, before any miſchief could happen.

Notwithſtanding this encouragement, he could not ſuppreſs the reluctance with which he went to the field, and caſt many a wiſhful look over his left ſhoulder, to ſee whether or not his adverſary was at his heels. When, by the advice of his ſecond, he took poſſeſſion of the ground, and turned about with his face to the enemy, it was not ſo dark, but that Peregrine could perceive the unuſual paleneſs of his countenance, and the ſweat ſtanding in large drops upon his forehead; nay, there was a manifeſt diſorder in his ſpeech, when he regretted his want of the Pila and Parma, with which he would have made

made a rattling noiſe, to aſtoniſh his foe, in ſpringing forward, and ſinging the hymn to battle, in the manner of the ancients.

In the mean time, obſerving the heſitation of his antagoniſt, who, far from advancing, ſeemed to recoil, and even ſtruggle with his ſecond, he gueſſed the ſituation of the painter's thoughts; and collecting all the manhood that he poſſeſſed, ſeized the opportunity of profiting by his enemy's conſternation. Striking his ſword and piſtol together, he advanced in a ſort of trot, raiſing a loud howl, in which he repeated, in lieu of the Spartan ſong, part of the ſtrophe from one of Pindar's Pythia, beginning with *ek theon gar makanai paſai Broteais aretais*, &c. This imitation of the Greeks had all the deſired effect upon the painter, who ſeeing the phyſician running towards him, like a fury, with a piſtol in his right hand, which was extended, and hearing the dreadful yell he uttered, and the outlandiſh words he pronounced, was ſeized with an univerſal palſy of his limbs. He would have dropped down upon the ground, had not Pipes ſupported and encouraged him to ſtand upon his defence. The doctor, contrary to his expectation, finding that he had not flinched from the ſpot, though he had now performed one half of his career, put in practice his laſt effort, by firing his piſtol, the noiſe of which no ſooner reached the ears of the affrighted painter, than he recommended his ſoul to God, and roared for mercy with great vociferation.

The republican, overjoyed at this exclamation, commanded him to yield, and ſurrender his arms, on pain of immediate death; upon which he threw away his piſtols and ſword; in ſpite of all the admonitions and even threats of

his ſecond, who left him to his fate, and went up to his maſter, ſtopping his noſe with ſigns of loathing and abhorrence.

The victor having won the Spolia Opima, granted him his life, on condition, that he would on his knees ſupplicate his pardon, acknowledge himſelf inferior to his conqueror in every virtue and qualification, and promiſe for the future to merit his favour by ſubmiſſion and reſpect. Theſe inſolent terms were readily embraced by the unfortunate challenger, who fairly owned, that he was not at all calculated for the purpoſes of war, and that henceforth he would contend with no weapon but his pencil. He begged with great humility, that Mr. Pickle would not think the worſe of his morals for this defect of courage, which was a natural infirmity inherited from his father, and ſuſpend his opinion of his talents, until he ſhould have an opportunity of contemplating the charms of his Cleopatra, which would be finiſhed in leſs than three months.

Our hero obſerved with an affected air of diſpleaſure, that no man could be juſtly condemned for being ſubject to the impreſſions of fear; and therefore his cowardice might eaſily be forgiven: but there was ſomething ſo preſumptuous, diſhoneſt and diſingenuous, in arrogating a quality to which he knew he had not the ſmalleſt pretenſion, that he could not forget his miſbehaviour all at once, though he would condeſcend to communicate with him as formerly, in hopes of ſeeing a reformation in his conduct. Pallet proteſted, that there was no diſſimulation in the caſe; for he was ignorant of his own weakneſs, until his reſolution was put to the trial: he faithfully promiſed to demean himſelf, during the re-

maining part of the tour, with that conſcious modeſty and penitence which became a perſon in his condition; and, for the preſent, implored the aſſiſtance of Mr. Pipes, in diſembaraſſing him from the diſagreeable conſequence of his fear.

CHAP. LXIV.

The Doctor exults in his victory. They ſet out for Rotterdam, *where they are entertained by two* Dutch *gentlemen in a yacht, which is overturned in the* Maes, *to the manifeſt hazard of the painter's life. They ſpend the evening with their entertainers, and next day viſit a cabinet of curioſities.*

TOM was accordingly ordered to miniſter to his occaſions; and the conqueror, elated with his ſucceſs, which he in a great meaſure attributed to his manner of attack, and the hymn which he howled, told Peregrine, that he was now convinced of the truth of what Pindar ſung in theſe words, *oſſa de me pephileke Zeus, atuzontai Boan Pieridon aionta*; for he had no ſooner begun to repeat the mellifluent ſtrains of that divine poet, than the wretch his antagoniſt was confounded, and his nerves unſtrung.

On their return to the inn, he expatiated on the prudence and tranquillity of his own behaviour, and aſcribed the conſternation of Pallet to the remembrance of ſome crime that lay heavy upon his conſcience: for, in his opinion, a man

of

of virtue and common ſenſe could not poſſibly be afraid of death, which is not only the peaceful harbour that receives him ſhattered on the tempeſtuous ſea of life, but alſo the eternal ſeal of his fame and glory, which it is no longer in his power to forfeit and forego. He lamented his fate, in being doomed to live in ſuch degenerate days, when war is become a mercenary trade; and ardently wiſhed, that the day would come, when he ſhould have ſuch an opportunity of ſignalizing his courage in the cauſe of liberty, as that of Marathon, where an handful of Athenians, fighting for their freedom, defeated the whole ſtrength of the Perſian empire. "Would to heaven! (ſaid he) my muſe were bleſſed with an occaſion to emulate that glorious teſtimony on the trophy in Cyprus, erected by Cimon, for two great victories gained on the ſame day over the Perſians by ſea and land; in which it is very remarkable, that the greatneſs of the occaſion has raiſed the manner of expreſſion above the uſual ſimplicity and modeſty of all other ancient inſcriptions." He then repeated it with all the pomp of declamation, and ſignified his hope, that the French would one day invade us with ſuch an army as that which Xerxes led into Greece, that it might be in his power to devote himſelf, like Leonidas, to the freedom of his country.

This memorable combat being thus determined, and every thing that was remarkable in Antwerp ſurveyed, they ſent their baggage down the Scheld to Rotterdam, and ſet out for the ſame place in a poſt waggon, which that ſame evening brought them in ſafety to the banks of the Maeze. They put up at an Engliſh houſe of entertainment, remarkable for the modeſty

and

and moderation of the landlord; and next morning the doctor went in perſon, to deliver letters of recommendation to two Dutch gentlemen, from one of his acquaintance at Paris. Neither of them happened to be at home when he called; ſo that he left a meſſage at their lodgings, with his addreſs; and in the afternoon they waited upon the company, and after many hoſpitable profeſſions, one of the two invited them to ſpend the evening at his houſe.

Mean while, they had provided a pleaſure-yacht, in which they propoſed to treat them with an excurſion upon the Maeze. This being almoſt the only diverſion that place affords, our young gentleman reliſhed the propoſal; and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Mr. Jolter, who declined the voyage on account of the roughneſs of the weather, they went on board without heſitation, and found a collation prepared in the cabin. While they tacked to and fro in the river, under the impulſe of a mackerel breeze, the phyſician expreſſed his ſatisfaction, and Pallet was raviſhed with the entertainment. But the wind increaſing, to the unſpeakable joy of the Dutchmen, who had now an opportunity of ſhewing their dexterity in the management of the veſſel, the gueſts found it inconvenient to ſtand upon deck, and impoſſible to ſit below, on account of the clouds of tobacco ſmoke which rolled from the pipes of their entertainers, in ſuch volumes as annoyed them even to the hazard of ſuffocation. This fumigation, together with the extraordinary motion of the ſhip, began to affect the head and ſtomach of the painter, who begg'd earneſtly to be ſet on ſhore: but the Dutch gentlemen, who had no idea of his ſufferings, inſiſted,

fisted, with surprising obstinacy of regard, upon his staying until he should see an instance of the skill of their mariners; and bringing him on deck, commanded the men to carry the vessel's lee-gunwale under water. This nicety of navigation they instantly performed, to the admiration of Pickle, the discomposure of the doctor, and terror of Pallet, who blessed himself from the courtesy of a Dutchman, and prayed to heaven for his deliverance.

While the Hollanders enjoyed the reputation of this feat, and the distress of the painter at the same time, the yacht was overtaken by a sudden squall, that overset her in a moment, and flung every man overboard into the Maeze, before they could have the least warning of their fate, much less, time to provide against the accident. Peregrine, who was an expert swimmer, reached the shore in safety; the physician, in the agonies of despair, laid fast hold on the trunk-breeches of one of the men, who dragged him to the other side; the entertainers landed at the bomb-keys, smoking their pipes all the way with great deliberation; and the poor painter must have gone to the bottom, had not he been encountered by the cable of a ship, that lay at anchor near the scene of their disaster. Though his senses had forsaken him, his hands fastened by instinct on this providential occurrence, which he held with such a convulsive grasp, that when a boat was sent out to bring him on shore, it was with the utmost difficulty that his fingers were disengaged. He was carried into a house, deprived of the use of speech, and bereft of all sensation; and being suspended by the heels, a vast quantity of water ran out of his mouth. This evacuation being made, he began to utter dreadful

dreadful groans, which gradually increaſed to a continued roar; and after he had regained the uſe of his ſenſes, he underwent a delirium that laſted ſeveral hours. As for the treaters, they never dreamed of expreſſing the leaſt concern to Pickle or the phyſician for what had happened, becauſe it was an accident ſo common, as to paſs without notice.

Leaving the care of the veſſel to the ſeamen, the company retired to their reſpective lodgings, in order to ſhift their cloaths; and in the evening our travellers were conducted to the houſe of their new friend, who, with a view of making his invitation the more agreeable, had aſſembled to the number of twenty or thirty Engliſhmen, of all ranks and degrees, from the merchant to the periwig-maker's prentice.

In the midſt of this congregation ſtood a chafing-diſh with live coals, for the convenience of lighting their pipes, and every individual was accommodated with a ſpitting-box. There was not a mouth in the apartment unfurniſhed with a tube, ſo that they reſembled a convocation of Chimeras breathing fire and ſmoke; and our gentlemen were fain to imitate their example in their own defence. It is not to be ſuppoſed that the converſation was either very ſprightly or polite; the whole entertainment was of the Dutch caſt, frowzy and phlegmatic: and our adventurer, as he returned to his lodging, tortured with the head-ach, and diſguſted with every circumſtance of his treatment, curſed the hour in which the doctor had ſaddled them with ſuch troubleſome companions.

Next morning by eight o'clock, theſe polite Hollanders returned the viſit, and after breakfaſt, attended

attended their Engliſh friends to the houſe of a perſon that poſſeſſed a very curious cabinet of curioſities, to which they had ſecured our company's admiſſion. The owner of this collection was a cheeſemonger, who received them in a woollen night-cap, with ſtraps buttoned under his chin. As he underſtood no language but his own, he told them, by the canal of one of their conductors, that he did not make a practice of ſhewing his curioſities; but underſtanding that they were Engliſhmen, and recommended to his friends, he was content to ſubmit them to their peruſal. So ſaying, he led them up a dark ſtair, into a ſmall room, decorated with a few paltry figures in plaiſter of Paris, two or three miſerable landſchapes, the ſkins of an otter, ſeal, and ſome fiſhes ſtuffed; and in one corner ſtood a glaſs-caſe, furniſhed with newts, frogs, lizzards, and ſerpents, preſerved in ſpirits; a human fœtus, a calf with two heads, and about two dozen of butterflies pinned upon paper.

The virtuoſo having exhibited theſe particulars, eyed the ſtrangers with a look ſoliciting admiration and applauſe; and as he could not perceive any ſymptom of either in their geſtures or countenances, withdrew a curtain, and diſplayed a wainſcot cheſt of drawers, in which he gave them to underſtand, was ſomething that would agreeably amuſe the imagination. Our travellers, regaled with this notice, imagined that they would be entertained with the ſight of ſome curious medals, or other productions of antiquity; but how were they diſappointed, when they ſaw nothing but a variety of ſhells, diſpoſed in whimſical figures, in each drawer! After he had detained

tained them full two hours with a tedious commentary upon the ſhape, ſize and colour of each department, he, with a ſupercilious ſimper, deſired that the Engliſh gentlemen would frankly and candidly declare whether his cabinet, or that of mynheer Sloane, at London, was the moſt valuable. When this requeſt was ſignified in Engliſh to the company, the painter inſtantly exclaimed, "By the Lard! they are not to be named of a day. And as for that matter, I would not give one corner of Saltero's coffee-houſe, at Chelſea, for all the traſh he hath ſhewn." Peregrine, unwilling to mortify any perſon who had done his endeavour to pleaſe him, obſerved, that what they had ſeen was very curious and entertaining; but that no private collection in Europe was equal to that of Sir Hans Sloane, which, excluſive of preſents, had coſt an hundred thouſand pounds. The two conductors were confounded at this aſſeveration, which being communicated to the cheeſemonger, he ſhook his head with a ſignificant grin; and tho' he did not chooſe to expreſs his incredulity in words, gave our hero to underſtand, that he did not much depend upon his veracity.

From the houſe of this Dutch naturaliſt, they were dragged all round the city, by the painful civility of their attendants, who did not quit them till the evening was well advanced, and then not till after they had promiſed to be with them before ten o'clock next day, in order to conduct them to a country-houſe, ſituated in a pleaſant village on the other ſide of the river.

Pickle was already ſo much fatigued with their hoſpitality, that, for the firſt time of his life, he ſuffered a dejection of ſpirits; and reſolved, at any

any rate, to avoid the threatened perſecution of to-morrow. With this view, he ordered his ſervants to pack up ſome cloaths and linnen in a portmanteau: and in the morning embarked, with his governor, in the Treckſkuyt, for the Hague, whither he pretended to be called by ſome urgent occaſion, leaving his fellow-travellers to make his apology to their friends; and aſſuring them, that he would not proceed for Amſterdam, without their ſociety. He arrived at the Hague in the forenoon, and dined at an ordinary frequented by officers and people of faſhion; where being informed, that the princeſs would ſee company in the evening, he dreſſed himſelf in a rich ſuit of the Pariſian cut, and went to court, without any introduction. A perſon of his appearance could not fail to attract the notice of ſuch a ſmall circle. The prince himſelf, underſtanding he was an Engliſhman and a ſtranger, went up to him, without ceremony; and having welcomed him to the place, converſed with him, for ſome minutes, on the common topics of diſcourſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXV.

They proceed to the Hague; *from whence they depart for* Amſterdam, *where they ſee a* Dutch *tragedy. Viſit the muſic-houſe, in which* Peregrine *quarrels with the captain of a man of war. They paſs through* Haarlem, *in their way to* Leyden. *Return to* Rotterdam, *where the company ſeparates, and our hero, with his attendants, arrives in ſafety at* Harwich.

BEing joined by their fellow-travellers, in the morning, they made a tour to all the remarkable places in this celebrated village; ſaw the foundery, the Stadthouſe, the Spinhuys, Vauxhall, and Count Bentinck's gardens, and in the evening went to the French comedy, which was directed by a noted Harlequin, who had found means to flatter the Dutch taſte ſo effectually, that they extolled him as the greateſt actor that ever appeared in the province of Holland. This famous company did not repreſent regular theatrical pieces, but only a ſort of impromptu's, in which this noted player always performed the greateſt part of the entertainment. Among other ſallies of wit that eſcaped him, there was one circumſtance ſo remarkably adapted to the diſpoſition and genius of his audience, that it were pity to paſs it over in ſilence. A windmill being exhibited on the ſcene, Harlequin, after having ſurveyed it with curioſity and admiration, aſks of one of the millers, the uſe of that machine; and being told, that it was a windmill, obſerves with ſome concern, that as there was

not

not the leaſt breath of wind, he could not have the pleaſure of ſeeing it turn round. Urged by this conſideration, he puts himſelf into the attitude of a perſon wrapt in profound meditation; and having continued a few ſeconds in this poſture, runs to the miller with great eagerneſs and joy, and telling him that he had found an expedient to make his mill work, very fairly unbuttons his breeches: then preſenting his poſteriors to the ſails of the machine, certain exploſions are immediately heard, and the arms of the mill begin to turn round, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators, who approve the joke with loud peals of applauſe.

Our travellers ſtayed a few days at the Hague, during which the young gentleman waited on the Britiſh ambaſſador, to whom he was recommended by his Excellency at Paris, and loſt about thirty guineas at billiards to a French adventurer, who decoyed him into the ſnare by keeping up his game. Then they departed in a poſt-waggon for Amſterdam, being provided with letters of introduction to an Engliſh merchant reſiding in that city, under whoſe auſpices they viſited every thing worth ſeeing, and among other excurſions went to ſee a Dutch tragedy acted; an entertainment which, of all others, had the ſtrangeſt effect upon the organs of our hero; the dreſs of their chief perſonages was ſo antick, their manner ſo aukwardly abſurd, and their language ſo ridiculouſly unfit for conveying the ſentiments of love and honour, that Peregrine's nerves were diuretically affected with the complicated abſurdity, and he was compelled to withdraw twenty times before the cataſtrophe of the piece.

The

The ſubject of this performance was the famous ſtory of Scipio's continence and virtue, in reſtoring the fair captive to her lover. The young Roman hero was repreſented by a broad-fac'd Batavian, in a burgo-maſter's gown and a fur-cap, ſitting ſmoaking his pipe at a table furniſhed with a can of beer, a drinking-glaſs, and a plate of tobacco: the lady was ſuch a perſon as Scipio might very well be ſuppoſed to give away, without any great effort of generoſity; and indeed the Celtiberian prince ſeemed to be of that opinion; for, upon receiving her from the hand of the victor, he diſcovered none of thoſe tranſports of gratitude and joy which Livy deſcribes, in recounting this event. The Dutch Scipio, however, was complaiſant enough in his way; for he deſired her to ſit at his right hand, by the appellation of *Ya frow*, and with his own fingers filling a clean pipe, preſented it to Mynheer Allucio the lover. The reſt of the œconomy of the piece was in the ſame taſte; which was ſo agreeable to the audience, that they ſeemed to have ſhaken off their natural phlegm, in order to applaud the performance.

From the play our company adjourned to the houſe of their friend, where they ſpent the evening; and the converſation turning upon poetry, a Dutchman who was preſent, and underſtood the Engliſh language, having liſtened very attentively to the diſcourſe, lifted up with both hands the greateſt part of a Cheſhire cheeſe that lay upon the table, ſaying, "I do know vat is boetrie. Mine brotre be a great boet, and ave vrought a book as dick as all dat." Pickle, diverted with this method of eſtimating an author according to the quantity of his works, inquired about the

ſubjects of this bard's writings; but of theſe his brother could give no account, or other information, but that there was little market for the commodity, which hung heavy upon his hands, and induced him to wiſh he had applied himſelf to another trade.

The only remarkable ſcene in Amſterdam, which our company had not ſeen, was the Spuyl or muſick-houſes, which, by the connivance of the magiſtrates, are maintained for the recreation of thoſe who might attempt the chaſtity of creditable women, if they were not provided with ſuch conveniences. To one of theſe night-houſes did our travellers repair, under the conduct of the Engliſh merchant, and were introduced into ſuch another place as the ever memorable coffee-houſe of Moll King; with this difference, that the company here were not ſo riotous as the Bucks of Covent-Garden, but formed themſelves into a circle, within which ſome of the number danced to the muſick of a ſcurvy organ and a few other inſtruments, that uttered tunes very ſuitable to the diſpoſition of the hearers, while the whole apartment was ſhrouded with clouds of ſmoke impervious to the view. When our gentlemen entered, the floor was occupied by two females and their gallants, who, in the performance of their exerciſe, lifted their legs like ſo many oxen at plough; and the pipe of one of theſe hoppers happening to be exhauſted, in the midſt of his ſarabrand, he very deliberately drew forth his tobacco-box, filling and lighting it again, without any interruption to the dance. Peregrine being unchecked by the preſence of his governor, who was too tender of his own reputation to attend them in this expedition, made

up

up to a ſprightly French girl that ſat in ſeeming expectation of a cuſtomer, and prevailing upon her to be his partner, led her into the circle, and, in his turn, took the opportunity of dancing a minuet, to the admiration of all preſent. He intended to have exhibited another ſpecimen of his ability in this art, when a captain of a Dutch man of war chancing to come in, and ſeeing a ſtranger engaged with the lady whom, it ſeems, he had beſpoke for his bedfellow, he advanced, without any ceremony, and ſeizing her by the arm, pull'd her to the other ſide of the room. Our adventurer, who was not a man to put up with ſuch a brutal affront, followed the raviſher with indignation in his eyes; and puſhing him on one ſide, retook the ſubject of their conteſt, and led her back to the place from whence ſhe had been dragged. The Dutchman, enraged at the youth's preſumption, obeyed the firſt dictates of his choler, and lent his rival a hearty box on the ear; which was immediately repaid with intereſt, before our hero could recollect himſelf ſufficiently to lay his hand upon his ſword, and beckon the aggreſſor to the door.

Notwithſtanding the confuſion and diſorder which this affair produced in the room, and the endeavours of Pickle's company, who interpoſed, in order to prevent bloodſhed, the antagoniſts reached the ſtreet; and Peregrine drawing, was ſurpriſed to ſee the captain advance againſt him with a long knife, which he preferred to the ſword that hung by his ſide. The youth, confounded at this prepoſterous behaviour, deſired him, in the French tongue, to lay aſide that vulgar implement, and approach like a gentleman: but the Hollander, who neither underſtood the

propoſal, nor would have complied with his demand had he been made acquainted with his meaning, ruſhed forward like a deſperado, before his adverſary could put himſelf on his guard; and if the young gentleman had not been endued with ſurpriſing agility, his noſe would have fallen a ſacrifice to the fury of the aſſailant. Finding himſelf in ſuch imminent jeopardy, he leaped to one ſide, and the Dutchman paſſing him, in the force of his career, he with one nimble kick made ſuch application to his enemy's heels, that he flew like lightening into the canal, where he had almoſt periſhed by pitching upon one of the poſts with which it was faced.

Peregrine having performed this exploit, did not ſtay for the captain's coming on ſhore, but retreated with all diſpatch, by the advice of his conductor; and next day embarked, with his companions, in the Skuyt, for Haarlem, where they dined, and in the evening arrived at the antient city of Leyden, where they met with ſome Engliſh ſtudents, who treated them with great hoſpitality. Not but that the harmony of the converſation was that ſame night interrupted by a diſpute that aroſe between one of thoſe young gentlemen and the phyſician, about the cold and hot methods of preſcription in the gout and rheumatiſm; and proceeded to ſuch a degree of mutual reviling, that Pickle, aſhamed and incenſed at his fellow traveller's want of urbanity, eſpouſed the other's cauſe, and openly rebuked him for his unmannerly petulance, which (he ſaid) rendered him unfit for the purpoſes, and unworthy of the benefit of ſociety. This unexpected declaration overwhelmed the doctor with amazement and confuſion; he was inſtantaneouſly deprived of his ſpeech, and during

during the remaining part of the partie, ſat in ſilent mortification. In all probability he deliberated with himſelf, whether or not he ſhould expoſtulate with the young gentleman on the freedom he had taken with his character in a company of ſtrangers; but as he knew he had not a Pallet to deal with, he very prudently ſuppreſſed that ſuggeſtion, and in ſecret chewed the cud of reſentment.

After they had viſited the phyſic garden, the univerſity, the anatomical hall, and every other thing that was recommended to their view, they returned to Rotterdam, and held a conſultation upon the method of tranſporting themſelves to England. The doctor, whoſe grudge againſt Peregrine was rather inflamed than allayed by our hero's indifference and neglect, had tampered with the ſimplicity of the painter, who was proud of his advances towards a perfect reconciliation; and now took the opportunity of parting with our adventurer, by declaring that he and his friend Mr. Pallet were reſolved to take their paſſage in a trading ſloop, after he had heard Peregrine object againſt that tedious, diſagreeable and uncertain method of conveyance. Pickle immediately ſaw his intention; and, without uſing the leaſt argument to diſſuade them from their deſign, or expreſſing the ſmalleſt degree of concern at their ſeparation, very coolly wiſhed them a proſperous voyage, and ordered his baggage to be ſent to Helvoetſluys. There he himſelf, and his retinue, went on board of the pacquet next day, and, by the favour of a fair wind, in eighteen hours arrived at Harwich.

CHAP. LXVI.

Peregrine *delivers his letters of recommendation at* London, *and returns to the gariſon, to the unſpeakable joy of the commodore and his whole family.*

NOW that our hero found himſelf on Engliſh ground, his heart dilated with the proud recollection of his own improvement ſince he left his native ſoil. He began to recognize the intereſting ideas of his tender years; he enjoyed, by anticipation, the pleaſure of ſeeing his friends in the gariſon, after an abſence of eighteen months; and the image of his charming Emily, which other leſs worthy conſiderations had depreſſed, reſumed the full poſſeſſion of his breaſt. He remembered, with ſhame, that he had neglected the correſpondence with her brother, which he himſelf had ſolicited, and in conſequence of which he had received a letter from that young gentleman while he lived at Paris. In ſpite of theſe conſcientious reflections, he was too ſelf-ſufficient to think he ſhould find any difficulty in obtaining forgiveneſs for ſuch ſins of omiſſion; and began to imagine, that his paſſion would be prejudicial to the dignity of his ſituation, if it could not be gratified upon terms which formerly his imagination durſt not conceive.

Sorry am I, that the taſk I have undertaken, lays me under the neceſſity of divulging this degeneracy in the ſentiments of our imperious youth, who was now in the heyday of his blood, fluſhed with the conſciouſneſs of his own qualifications, vain of his fortune, and elated on the wings

wings of imaginary expectation. Tho' he was deeply enamoured of miſs Gauntlet, he was far from propoſing her heart as the ultimate aim of his gallantry, which (he did not doubt) would triumph o'er the moſt illuſtrious females of the land, and at once regale his appetite and ambition.

Mean while, being willing to make his appearance at the gariſon equally ſurpriſing and agreeable, he cautioned Mr. Jolter againſt writing to the commodore, who had not heard of them ſince their departure from Paris, and hired a poſt-chaiſe and horſes for London. The governor going out to give orders about the carriage, inadvertently left a paper book open upon the table; and his pupil caſting his eyes upon the page, chanced to read theſe words: "Sept. 15. Arrived in ſafety, by the bleſſing of God, in this unhappy kingdom of England. And thus concludes the journal of my laſt peregrination." Peregrine's curioſity being inflamed by this extraordinary concluſion, he turned to the beginning, and peruſed ſeveral ſheets of a diary, ſuch as is commonly kept by that claſs of people known by the denomination of travelling governors, for the ſatisfaction of themſelves and the parents or guardians of their pupils, and for the edification and entertainment of their friends.

That the reader may have a clear idea of Mr. Jolter's performance, we ſhall tranſcribe the tranſactions of one day, as he had recorded them; and that abſtract will be a ſufficient ſpecimen of the whole plan and execution of the work.

"May 3. At eight o'clock ſet out from Boulogne in a poſt chaiſe: the morning hazy and cold. Fortified my ſtomach with a cordial. Re-

commended ditto to Mr. P. as an antidote againſt the fog. Mem. He refuſed it. The hither horſe greaſed in the off-paſtern of the hind leg. Arrive at Samers. Mem. This laſt was a poſt and a half, i. e. three leagues, or nine Engliſh miles. The day clears up. A fine champain country, well ſtored with corn. The poſtilion ſays his prayers in paſſing by a wooden crucifix upon the road. Mem. The horſes ſtaled in a ſmall brook that runs in a bottom, betwixt two hills. Arrive at Cormont. A common poſt. A diſpute with my pupil, who is obſtinate, and ſwayed by an unlucky prejudice. Proceed to Montreuil, where we dine on choice pigeons. A very moderate charge. No chamberpot in the room; owing to the negligence of the maid. This an ordinary poſt. Set out again for Nampont. Troubled with flatulences and indigeſtion. Mr. P. is ſullen, and ſeems to miſtake an eructation for the breaking of wind backwards. From Nampont depart for Bernay, at which place we arrive in the evening, and propoſe to ſtay all night. N. B. The two laſt are double poſts, and our cattle very willing though not ſtrong. Sup on a delicate ragout and excellent partridges, in company with Mr. H. and his ſpouſe. Mem. The ſaid H. trod upon my corn by miſtake. Diſcharge the bill, which is not very reaſonable. Diſpute with Mr. P. about giving money to the ſervant: he inſiſts upon my giving a twenty four ſol piece; which is too much by two thirds, in all conſcience. N. B. She was a pert baggage, and did not deſerve a liard."

Our hero was ſo much diſobliged with certain circumſtances of this amuſing and inſtructing journal, that, by way of puniſhing the author, he

he interlined theſe words betwixt two paragraphs, in a manner that exactly reſembled the tutor's hand writing; "Mem. Had the pleaſure of drinking myſelf into a ſweet intoxication, by toaſting our lawful king, and his royal family, among ſome worthy Engliſh fathers of the ſociety of Jeſus."

Having taken this revenge, he ſet out for London, where he waited upon thoſe noblemen to whom he had letters of recommendation from Paris: and was not only graciouſly received, but even loaded with careſſes and proffers of ſervice, becauſe they underſtood he was a young gentleman of fortune, who far from ſtanding in need of their countenance or aſſiſtance, would make an uſeful and creditable addition to the number of their adherents. He had the honour of dining at their tables, in conſequence of preſſing invitations, and of ſpending ſeveral evenings with the ladies, to whom he was particularly agreeable, on account of his perſon, addreſs, and bleeding freely at play.

Being thus initiated in the beau monde, he thought it was high time to pay his reſpects to his generous benefactor the commodore; and accordingly departed one morning, with his train, for the gariſon, at which he arrived in ſafety the ſame night. When he entered the gate, which was opened by a new ſervant that did not know him, he found his old friend Hatchway ſtalking in the yard, with a night-cap on his head, and a pipe in his mouth; and advancing to him, took him by the hand before he had any intimation of his approach. The lieutenant, thus ſaluted by a ſtranger, ſtared at him in ſilent aſtoniſhment, till he recollected his features, which were no

ſooner known, than daſhing the pipe upon the pavement, he exclaimed, "Smite my croſs-trees! th'art welcome to port;" and hugg'd him in his arms with great affection. He then, by a cordial ſqueeze, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing his old ſhip-mate Tom, who applying his whiſtle to his mouth, the whole caſtle ecchoed with his performance.

The ſervants hearing the well known ſound, poured out in a tumult of joy; and underſtanding that their young maſter was returned, raiſed ſuch a peal of acclamation, as aſtoniſhed the commodore and his lady, and inſpired Julia with ſuch an intereſting preſage, that her heart began to throb with violence. Running out in the hurry and perturbation of her hope, ſhe was ſo much overwhelmed at ſight of her brother, that ſhe actually fainted in his arms. But from this trance ſhe ſoon awaked; and Peregrine having teſtified his pleaſure and affection, went up ſtairs, and preſented himſelf before his godfather and aunt. Mrs. Trunnion roſe and received him with a gracious embrace, bleſſing God for his happy return from a land of impiety and vice, in which ſhe hoped his morals had not been corrupted, nor his principles of religion altered or impaired. The old gentleman being confined to his chair, was ſtruck dumb with pleaſure at his appearance; and having made divers ineffectual efforts to get up, at length diſcharged a volly of curſes againſt his own limbs, and held out his hand to his godſon, who kiſs'd it with great reſpect.

After he had finiſhed his apoſtrophe to the gout, which was the daily and hourly ſubject of his execrations, "Well, my lad, (ſaid he) I care not how ſoon I go to bottom, now I behold

thee

hee ſafe in harbour again: and yet, I tell a damn'd lie: I would I could keep afloat, until I ſhould ſee a luſty boy of thy begetting. Odds my timbers! I love thee ſo well, that I believe thou art the ſpawn of my own body; though I can give no account of thy being put upon the ſtocks." Then turning his eye upon Pipes, who by this time had penetrated into his apartment, and addreſſed him with the uſual ſalutation of "What cheer?" "Ahey! (cried he) are you there, you herring-fac'd ſon of a ſea-calf? What a ſlippery trick you played your old commander! But come, you dog, there's my fiſt; I forgive you for the love you bear to my godſon. Go man your tackle, and hoiſt a caſk of ſtrong beer into the yard, knock out the bung, and put a pump in it, for the uſe of all my ſervants and neighbours: and d'ye hear, let the patereroes be fired, and the gariſon illuminated, as rejoicings for the ſafe arrival of your maſter. By the Lord! if I had the uſe of theſe damn'd ſhambling ſhanks, I would dance a hornpipe with the beſt of you."

The next object of his attention was Mr. Jolter, who was honoured with particular marks of diſtinction, and the repeated promiſe of enjoying the living in his gift, as an acknowledgment of the care and diſcretion with which he had ſuperintended the education and morals of our hero. The governor was ſo affected by the generoſity of his patron, that the tears ran down his cheeks, while he expreſſed his gratitude, and the infinite ſatisfaction he felt, in contemplating the accompliſhments of his pupil.

Mean while, Pipes did not neglect the orders he had received; the beer was produced, the

gates were thrown open for the admiſſion of all comers, the whole houſe was lighted up, and the datereroes were diſcharged in repeated vollies. Such phænomena could not fail to attract the notice of the neighbourhood. The club at Tunley's were aſtoniſhed at the report of the guns, which produced various conjectures among the members of that ſagacious ſociety. The landlord obſerved, that in all likelihood the commodore was viſited by hobgoblins, and ordered the guns to be fired in token of diſtreſs, as he had acted twenty years before, when he was annoyed by the ſame grievance. The exciſeman, with a waggiſh ſneer, expreſſed his apprehenſion of Trunnion's death, in conſequence of which, the patereroes might be diſcharged with an equivocal intent, either as ſignals of his lady's ſorrow or rejoicing. The attorney ſignified a ſuſpicion of Hatchway's being married to Miſs Pickle, and that the firing and illuminations were in honour of the nuptials: upon which Gamaliel diſcovered ſome faint ſigns of emotion, and taking the pipe from his mouth, gave it as his opinion, that his ſiſter was brought to bed.

While they were thus bewildered in the maze of their own imaginations, a company of countrymen, who ſat drinking in the kitchen, and whoſe legs were more ready than their invention, ſallied out to know the meaning of theſe exhibitions. Underſtanding that there was a butt of ſtrong beer abroach in the yard, to which they were invited by the ſervants, ſaved themſelves the trouble and expence of returning to ſpend the evening at the public houſe, and liſted themſelves under the banner of Tom Pipes, who preſided as director of this feſtival.

The

The news of Peregrine's return being communicated to the pariſh, the parſon and three or four neighbouring gentlemen, who were well-wiſhers to our hero, immediately repaired to the gariſon in order to pay their compliments on this happy event; and were detained to ſupper. An elegant entertainment was prepared by the direction of Miſs July, who was an excellent houſewife; and the commodore was ſo invigorated with joy, that he ſeemed to have renewed his age.

Among thoſe who honoured the occaſion with his preſence was Mr. Clover, the young gentleman that made his addreſſes to Peregrine's ſiſter. His heart was ſo big with his paſſion, that while the reſt of the company were ingroſſed by their cups, he ſeized an opportunity of our hero's being detached from the converſation, and in the impatience of his love, conjured him to conſent to his happineſs; proteſting, that he would comply with any terms of ſettlement that a man of his fortune could embrace, in favour of a young lady who was abſolute miſtreſs of his affection.

Our youth thanked him very politely for his favourable ſentiments and honourable intention towards his ſiſter, and told him, that at preſent he ſaw no reaſon to obſtruct his deſire; that he would conſult Julia's own inclinations, and confer with him about the means of gratifying his wiſh: but in the mean time, begg'd to be excuſed from diſcuſſing any point of ſuch importance to them both. Reminding him of the jovial purpoſe on which they were happily met, he promoted ſuch a quick circulation of the bottle, that their mirth grew noiſy and obſtreperous; they broke forth into repeated peals of laughter,

without any previous incitement, except that of claret. Theſe exploſions were ſucceeded by Bacchanalian ſongs, in which the old gentleman himſelf attempted to bear a ſhare; the ſedate governor ſnapped time with his fingers, and the pariſh-prieſt aſſiſted in the chorus with a moſt expreſſive nakedneſs of countenance. Before midnight, they were almoſt all pinned to their chairs, as if they had been fixed by the power of inchantment; and what rendered the confinement ſtill more unfortunate, every ſervant in the houſe was in the ſame ſituation; ſo that they were fain to take their repoſe as they ſat, and nodded to each other like a congregation of anabaptiſts.

Next day, Peregrine communed with his ſiſter on the ſubject of her match with Mr. Clover, who (ſhe told him) had offered to ſettle a jointer of four hundred pounds, and take her to wife, without any expectation of a dowry. She, moreover, gave him to underſtand, that in his abſence ſhe had received ſeveral meſſages from her mother, commanding her to return to her father's houſe; but that ſhe had refuſed to obey theſe orders, by the advice and injunction of her aunt and the commodore, which were indeed ſeconded by her own inclination; becauſe ſhe had all the reaſon in the world to believe, that her mother only wanted an opportunity of treating her with ſeverity and rancour. The reſentment of that lady had been carried to ſuch indecent lengths, that ſeeing her daughter at church one day, ſhe roſe up, before the parſon entered, and reviled her with great bitterneſs, in the face of the whole congregation.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVII.

Sees his ſiſter happily married. Viſits Emilia, *who receives him according to his deſerts.*

HER brother being of opinion, that Mr. Clover's propoſal was not to be neglected, eſpecially as Julia's heart was engaged in his favour, communicated the affair to his uncle, who, with the approbation of Mrs. Trunnion, declared himſelf well ſatisfied with the young man's addreſſes, and deſired that they might be buckled with all expedition, without the knowledge or concurrence of her parents, to whom (on account of their unnatural barbarity) ſhe was not bound to pay the leaſt regard. Though our adventurer entertained the ſame ſentiments of the matter, and the lover dreading ſome obſtruction, earneſtly begged the immediate condeſcenſion of his miſtreſs, ſhe could not be prevailed upon to take ſuch a material ſtep, without having firſt ſolicited the permiſſion of her father, reſolved, nevertheleſs, to comply with the dictates of her own heart, ſhould his objections be frivolous or unjuſt.

Urged by this determination, her admirer waited upon Mr. Gamaliel at the publick houſe, and with the appearance of great deference and reſpect, made him acquainted with his affection for his daughter, communicated the particulars of his fortune, with the terms of ſettlement he was ready to make; and in concluſion told him, that he would marry her without a portion. This laſt offer ſeemed to have ſome weight with the father, who received it with civility, and pro-

promiſed, in a day or two, to favour him with a final anſwer to his demand. He, accordingly, that ſame evening conſulted his wife, who being exaſperated at the proſpect of her daughter's independency, argued with the moſt virulent expoſtulation againſt the match, as an impudent ſcheme of her own planning, with a view of inſulting her parents, towards whom ſhe had already been guilty of the moſt vicious diſobedience. In ſhort, ſhe uſed ſuch remonſtrances, as not only averted this weak huſband's inclination from the propoſal which he had reliſhed before, but even inſtigated him to apply for a warrant to apprehend his daughter, on the ſuppoſition that ſhe was about to beſtow herſelf in marriage without his privity or conſent.

The juſtice of peace to whom this application was made, though he could not refuſe the order, yet, being no ſtranger to the malevolence of the mother, which, together with Gamaliel's ſimplicity, was notorious in the county, he ſent an intimation of what had happened to the gariſon; upon which, a couple of centinels were placed on the gate, and at the preſſing ſolicitation of the lover, as well as the deſire of the commodore, her brother and aunt, Julia was wedded without further delay; the ceremony being performed by Mr. Jolter, becauſe the pariſh-prieſt prudently declined any occaſion of giving offence, and the curate was too much in the intereſt of their enemies to be employed in that office.

This domeſtic concern being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of our hero, he eſcorted her next day to the houſe of her huſband, who immediately wrote a letter to her father, declaring his reaſons for

for having thus ſuperceded his authority; and Mrs. Pickle's mortification was unſpeakable.

That the new-married couple might be guarded againſt all inſult, our young gentleman and his friend Hatchway, with their adherents, lodged in Mr. Clover's houſe for ſome weeks; during which they viſited their acquaintance in the neighbourhood, according to cuſtom. When the tranquillity of their family was perfectly eſtabliſhed, and the contract of marriage executed in the preſence of the old commodore and his lady, who gave her niece five hundred pounds to purchaſe jewels and cloaths, Mr. Peregrine could no longer reſtrain his impatience to ſee his dear Emily; and told his uncle, that next day he propoſed to ride acroſs the country, in order to viſit his friend Gauntlet, from whom he had not heard of a long time.

The old gentleman, looking ſteadfaſtly in his face, "Ah! damn your cunning! (ſaid he) I find the anchor holds faſt: I did ſuppoſe as how you would have ſlipt your cable, and changed your birth; but, I ſee, when a young fellow is once brought up by a pretty wench, he may man his capſtans and viol-block, if he wool; but he'll as ſoon heave up the Pike of Teneriff, as bring his anchor aweigh! Odds heartlikins! had I known the young woman was Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I ſhoudn't have thrown out ſignal for leaving off chace."

Our adventurer was not a little ſurprized to hear the commodore talk in this ſtile; and immediately conjectured, that his friend Godfrey had informed him of the whole affair. Inſtead of liſtening to this approbation of his flame, with thoſe tranſports of joy which he would have felt,

had he retained his former ſentiments, he was chagrined at Trunnion's declaration, and offended at the preſumption of the young ſoldier, in pretending to diſcloſe the ſecret with which he had intruſted him. Reddening with theſe reflections, he aſſured the commodore, that he never had ſerious thoughts of matrimony: ſo that if any perſon had told him he was under any engagement of that kind, he had abuſed his ear; for he proteſted, that he would never contract ſuch attachments, without his knowledge and expreſs permiſſion.

Trunnion commended him for his prudent reſolution, and obſerved, that though no perſon mentioned to him what promiſes had paſſed betwixt him and his ſweetheart, it was very plain that he had made love to her; and therefore, it was to be ſuppoſed, that his intentions were honourable: for, he could not believe he was ſuch a rogue in his heart, as to endeavour to debauch the daughter of a brave officer, who had ſerved his country with credit and reputation. Notwithſtanding this remonſtrance, which Pickle imputed to the commodore's ignorance of the world, he ſet out for the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the unjuſtifiable ſentiments of a man of pleaſure, who ſacrifices every conſideration to the deſire of his ruling appetite; and as Wincheſter lay in his way, reſolved to viſit ſome of his friends who lived in that place. It was in the houſe of one of theſe, that he was informed of Emilia's being then in town with her mother; upon which, he excuſed himſelf from ſtaying to drink tea, and immediately repaired to their lodgings, according to the direction he had received.

When

When he arrived at the door, inſtead of undergoing that perturbation of ſpirits, which a lover, in his intereſting ſituation, might be ſuppoſed to feel, he ſuffered no emotion but that of vanity and pride, favoured with an opportunity of ſelf-gratification, and entered his Emilia's apartment with the air of a conceited petit maitre, rather than that of the reſpectful admirer, when he viſits the object of his paſſion, after an abſence of ſeventeen months.

The young lady having been very much diſobliged at his mortifying neglect of her brother's letter, had ſummoned all her own pride and reſolution to her aid; and by means of a happy diſpoſition ſo far overcame her chagrin at his indifference, that ſhe was able to behave in his preſence with apparent tranquillity and eaſe. She was even pleaſed to find, he had by accident choſen a time for his viſit, when ſhe was ſurrounded by two or three young gentlemen, who profeſſed themſelves her admirers. Our gallant was no ſooner announced, than ſhe collected all her coquetry, put on the gayeſt air ſhe could aſſume, and contrived to giggle juſt as he appeared at the room-door. The compliments of ſalutation being performed, ſhe welcomed him to England in a careleſs manner, aſked the news of Paris, and, before he could make any reply, deſired one of the other gentlemen to proceed with the ſequel of that comical adventure, in the relation of which he had been interrupted.

Peregrine ſmiled within himſelf at this behaviour, which (without all doubt) he believed ſhe had affected to puniſh him for his unkind ſilence, while he was abroad; being fully perſuaded, that her heart was abſolutely at his devotion. On this

this ſuppoſition, he practiſed his Pariſian improvements on the art of converſation, and uttered a thouſand prettineſſes in the way of compliment, with ſuch incredible rotation of tongue, that his rivals were ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment; and Emilia fretted out of all temper, at ſeeing herſelf deprived of the prerogative of the ſex. He perſiſted, however, in this ſurpriſing loquacity, until the reſt of the company thought proper to withdraw, and then contracted his diſcourſe into the focus of love, which now put on a very different appearance from that which it had formerly worn. Inſtead of that awful veneration which her preſence uſed to inſpire, that chaſtity of ſentiment and delicacy of expreſſion, he now gazed upon her with the eyes of a libertine, he glowed with the impatience of deſire, talked in a ſtrain that barely kept within the bounds of decency, and attempted to ſnatch ſuch favours as ſhe, in the tenderneſs of mutual acknowledgement, had once vouchſafed to beſtow.

Grieved and offended as ſhe was, at this palpable alteration in his carriage, ſhe diſdained to remind him of his former deportment, and with diſſembled good humour, rallied him on the progreſs he had made in gallantry and addreſs: but far from ſubmitting to the liberties he would have taken, ſhe kept her perſon ſacred from his touch, and would not even ſuffer him to raviſh a kiſs of her fair hand: ſo that he reaped no other advantage from the exerciſe of his talents, during this interview, which laſted a whole hour, than that of knowing he had over-rated his own importance; and that Emily's heart was not a gariſon likely to ſurrender at diſcretion.

At

At length his addreſſes were interrupted by the arrival of the mother, who had gone abroad to viſit by herſelf; and the converſation becoming more general, he underſtood, that Godfrey was at London, ſoliciting for a lieutenancy that had fallen vacant in the regiment to which he belonged; and that Miſs Sophy was at home with her father.

Though our adventurer had not met with all the ſucceſs he expected by his firſt viſit, he did not deſpair of reducing the fortreſs, believing that in time there would be a mutiny in his favour; and accordingly, carried on the ſiege for ſeveral days, without profiting by his perſeverance; till at length, having attended the ladies to their own houſe in the country, he began to look upon this adventure as time miſpent, and reſolved to diſcontinue his attack, in hopes of meeting with a more favourable occaſion; being, in the mean time, ambitious of diſplaying, in an higher ſphere, thoſe qualifications which his vanity told him, were at preſent miſapplied.

CHAP. LXVIII.

He attends his uncle with great affection, during a fit of illneſs. Sets out again for London; *meets with his friend* Godfrey, *who is prevailed upon to accompany him to* Bath; *on the road to which place they chance to dine with a perſon, who entertains them with a curious account of a certain company of adventurers.*

THUS determined, he took leave of Emilia and her mother, on pretence of going to London upon ſome urgent buſineſs, and returned to the gariſon, leaving the good old lady very much concerned, and the daughter incenſed at his behaviour, which was the more unexpected, becauſe Godfrey had told them, that the commodore approved of his nephew's paſſion.

Our adventurer found his uncle ſo ill of the gout, which, for the firſt time, had taken poſſeſſion of his ſtomach, that his life was in imminent danger, and the whole family in diſorder: he therefore took the reins of government in his own hands, ſent for all the phyſicians in the neighbourhood, and attended him in perſon with the moſt affectionate care, during the whole fit, which laſted a fortnight, and then retired before the ſtrength of his conſtitution.

When the old gentleman recovered his health, he was ſo penetrated with Peregrine's behaviour, that he actually would have made over to him his whole fortune, and depended upon him for his own ſubſiſtence, had not our youth oppoſed the execution of the deed with all his influence and might, and even perſuaded him to make a will, in which his friend Hatchway, and all his other adherents,

adherents, were liberally remembered, and his aunt provided for, on her own terms. This material point being ſettled, he, with his uncle's permiſſion, departed for London, after having ſeen the family-affairs eſtabliſhed under the direction and adminiſtration of Mr. Jolter and the lieutenant: for, by this time, Mrs. Trunnion was wholly occupied with her ſpiritual concerns.

On his firſt arrival at London, he ſent a card to the lodgings of Gauntlet, in conſequence of a direction from his mother; and that young gentleman waited on him next morning, though not with that alacrity of countenance and warmth of friendſhip, which might have been expected from the intimacy of their former connexion. Nor was Peregrine himſelf actuated by the ſame unreſerved affection for the ſoldier, which he had formerly entertained. Godfrey, over and above the offence he had taken at Pickle's omiſſion in point of correſponding with him, had been informed, by a letter from his mother, of the youth's cavalier behaviour to Emilia, during his laſt reſidence at Wincheſter; and our young gentleman (as we have already obſerved) was diſguſted at the ſuppoſed diſcovery which the ſoldier had made, in his abſence, to the commodore. They perceived their mutual umbrage at meeting, and received each other with that civility of reſerve, which commonly happens between two perſons, when their friendſhip is in the wane.

Gauntlet at once divined the cauſe of the other's diſpleaſure; and in order to vindicate his own character, after the firſt compliments were paſſed, took the opportunity of inquiring after the health of the commodore, to tell Peregrine

that while he tarried at the garriſon, in his return from Dover, the ſubject of the converſation, one night, happening to turn on our hero's paſſion, the old gentleman had expreſſed his concern about that affair; and, among other obſervations, ſaid, he ſuppoſed the object of his love was ſome paultry huſſy, whom he had picked up when he was a boy at ſchool. Upon which, Mr. Hatchway aſſured him, that ſhe was a young woman of as good a family as any in the county; and after having prepoſſeſſed him in her favour, ventured (out of the zeal of his friendſhip) to tell who ſhe was: wherefore the diſcovery was not to be imputed to any other cauſe: and he hoped Mr. Pickle would acquit him of all ſhare in the tranſaction.

Peregrine was very well pleaſed to be thus undeceived; his countenance immediately cleared up, the formality of his behaviour relaxed into his uſual familiarity; he aſked pardon for his unmannerly neglect of Godfrey's letter, which, he proteſted, was not owing to any diſregard, or abatement of friendſhip, but to a hurry of youthful engagements, in conſequence of which, he had procraſtinated his anſwer from time to time, until he was ready to return in perſon.

The young ſoldier was contented with this apology; and as Pickle's intention, with reſpect to his ſiſter, was ſtill dubious and undeclared, he did not think it was incumbent upon him, as yet, to expreſs any reſentment on that ſcore; but was wiſe enough to foreſee, that the renewal of his intimacy with our young gentleman, might be the means of reviving that flame which had been diſſipated by a variety of new ideas. With thoſe ſentiments he laid aſide all reſerve,

and

and their communication immediately reſumed its former channel. Peregrine made him acquainted with all the adventures in which he had been engaged ſince their parting; and he, with the ſame confidence, related the remarkable incidents of his own fate; among other things, giving him to underſtand, that upon obtaining a commiſſion in the army, the father of his dear Sophy, without once inquiring about the occaſion of his promotion, had not only favoured him with his countenance in a much greater degree than heretofore, but alſo contributed his intereſt, and even promiſed the aſſiſtance of his purſe, in procuring for him a lieutenancy, which he was then ſoliciting with all his power; whereas, if he had not been enabled, by a moſt accidental piece of good fortune, to lift himſelf into the ſphere of an officer, he had all the reaſon in the world to believe, that this gentleman, and all the reſt of his wealthy relations, would have ſuffered him to languiſh in obſcurity and diſtreſs; and, by turning his misfortune into reproach, made it a plea for their own want of generoſity and friendſhip.

Peregrine underſtanding the ſituation of his friend's affairs, would have accommodated him upon the inſtant, with a ſum to accelerate the paſſage of his commiſſion through the offices; but, being too well acquainted with his ſcrupulous diſpoſition to manifeſt his benevolence in that manner, he found means to introduce himſelf to one of the gentlemen of the war office, who was ſo well ſatisfied with the arguments he uſed in behalf of his friend, that Godfrey's buſineſs was tranſacted in a very few days, though

he

he himſelf knew nothing of his intereſt's being thus reinforced.

By this time, the ſeaſon at Bath was begun; and our hero, panting with the deſire of diſtinguiſhing himſelf at that reſort of the faſhionable world, communicated his deſign of going thither to his friend Godfrey, whom he importuned to accompany him in the excurſion: and leave of abſence from his regiment being obtained, by the influence of Peregrine's new quality-friends, the two companions departed from London in a poſt-chaiſe, attended, as uſual, by the valet de chambre and Pipes, who were become almoſt as neceſſary to our adventurer as any two of his own organs.

At the inn, when they alighted for dinner, Godfrey perceived a perſon walking by himſelf in the yard, with a very penſive air, and upon obſerving him more narrowly, recognized him to be a profeſſed gameſter, whom he had formerly known at Tunbridge. On the ſtrength of this acquaintance, he accoſted the peripatetic, who knew him immediately; and, in the fulneſs of his grief and vexation, told him, that he was now on his return from Bath, where he had been ſtripp'd by a company of ſharpers, who reſented that he ſhould preſume to trade upon his own bottom.

Peregrine, who was extremely curious in his inquiries, imagining that he might learn ſome entertaining and uſeful anecdotes from this artiſt, invited him to dinner, and was accordingly fully informed of all the political ſyſtems at the Bath. He underſtood, that there was at London one great company of adventurers, who employed agents

agents in all the different branches of impoſition, throughout the whole kingdom of England, allowing theſe miniſters a certain proportion of the profits accruing from their induſtry and ſkill, and reſerving the greateſt ſhare for the benefit of the common ſtock, which was chargeable with the expence of fitting out individuals in their various purſuits, as well as with the loſs ſuſtained in the courſe of their adventures. Some, whoſe perſons and qualifications are by the company judged adequate to the taſk, exert their talents in making love to ladies of fortune, being accommodated with money and accoutrements for that purpoſe, after having given their bonds payable to one or other of the directors, on the day of marriage, for certain ſums, proportioned to the dowries they are to receive. Others, verſed in the doctrine of chances, and certain ſecret expedients, frequent all thoſe places where games of hazard are allowed; and ſuch as are maſters in the arts of billiards, tennis and bowls, are continually lying in wait, in all the ſcenes of theſe diverſions, for the ignorant and unwary. A fourth claſs attend horſe-races, being ſkilled in thoſe myſterious practices, by which the knowing-ones are taken in. Nor is this community unfurniſhed with thoſe who lay wanton wives and old rich widows under contribution, and extort money, by proſtituting themſelves to the embraces of their own ſex, and then threatening their admirers with proſecution. But their moſt important returns are made by that body of their undertakers who exerciſe their underſtandings in the innumerable ſtratagems of the card-table, at which no ſharper can be too infamous to be received, and even careſſed by perſons of the higheſt

rank and diſtinction. Among other articles of intelligence, our young gentleman learn'd, that thoſe agents, by whom their gueſt was broke, and expelled from Bath, had conſtituted a bank againſt all ſporters, and monopolized the advantage in all ſorts of play. He then told Gauntlet, that if he would put himſelf under his direction, he would return with them, and lay ſuch a ſcheme, as would infallibly ruin the whole ſociety at billiards, as he knew that Godfrey excelled them all in his knowledge of that game.

The ſoldier excuſed himſelf from engaging in any party of that kind; and after dinner the travellers parted; but, as the converſation between the two friends turned upon the information they had received, Peregrine projected a plan for puniſhing thoſe villanous peſts of ſociety, who prey upon their fellow-creatures; and it was put in execution by Gauntlet, in this manner.

CHAP. LXIX.

Godfrey *executes a ſcheme at* Bath, *by which a whole company of ſharpers is ruined.*

ON the evening after their arrival at Bath, Godfrey, who had kept himſelf up all day for that purpoſe, went in boots to the billiard-table; and two gentlemen being at play, began to bet with ſo little appearance of judgment, that one of the adventurers then preſent was inflamed with the deſire of profiting by his inexperience; and when the table was vacant, invited him to take

take a game for amuſement. The ſoldier, aſſuming the air of a ſelf-conceited dupe, anſwered, that he did not chooſe to throw away his time for nothing, but, if he pleaſed, would piddle for a crown a game. This declaration was very agreeable to the other, who wanted to be further confirmed in the opinion he had conceived of the ſtranger, before he would play for any thing of conſequence. The partie being accepted, Gauntlet put off his coat, and beginning with ſeeming eagerneſs, won the firſt game, becauſe his antagoniſt kept up his play with a view of encouraging him to wager a greater ſum. The ſoldier purpoſely bit at the hook, the ſtakes were doubled, and he was again victorious, by the permiſſion of his competitor. He now began to yawn; and obſerving, that it was not worth his while to proceed in ſuch a childiſh manner, the other ſwore, in an affected paſſion, that he would play with him for twenty guineas. The propoſal being embraced (thro' the connivance of Godfrey) the money was won by the ſharper, who exerted his dexterity to the uttermoſt, fearing that otherwiſe his adverſary would decline continuing the game.

Godfrey thus conquered, pretended to loſe his temper, curſed his own ill-luck, ſwore that the table had a caſt, and that the balls did not run true, changed his maſt, and, with great warmth, challenged his enemy to double the ſum. The gameſter, with feigned reluctance, complied with his deſire; and having got the firſt two hazards, offered to lay one hundred guineas to fifty on the game. The odds were taken; and Godfrey having allowed himſelf to be overcome, began to rage with great violence, broke the maſt

to pieces, threw the balls out at the window, and, in the fury of his indignation, defied his antagoniſt to meet him to-morrow, when he ſhould be refreſhed from the fatigue of travelling. This was a very welcome invitation to the gameſter, who imagining that the ſoldier would turn out a moſt beneficial prize, aſſured him, that he would not fail to be there next forenoon, in order to give him his revenge.

Gauntlet went home to his lodgings, fully certified of his own ſuperiority; and took his meaſures with Peregrine, touching the proſecution of their ſcheme; while his opponent made a report of his ſucceſs to the brethren of the gang, who reſolved to be preſent at the deciſion of the match, with the view of taking advantage of the ſtranger's paſſionate diſpoſition.

Affairs being thus concerted on both ſides, the players met, according to appointment, and the room was immediately filled with ſpectators, who either came thither by accident, curioſity, or deſign. The match was fixed for one hundred pounds a game, the principals choſe their inſtruments, and laid aſide their coats, and one of the knights of the order proffered to lay another hundred on the head of his aſſociate. Godfrey took him upon the inſtant. A ſecond worthy of the ſame claſs, ſeeing him ſo eager, challenged him to treble the ſum; and his propoſal met with the ſame reception, to the aſtoniſhment of the company, whoſe expectation was raiſed to a very intereſting pitch. The game was begun, and the ſoldier having loſt the firſt hazard, the odds were offered by the confederacy, with great vociferation; but no body would run ſuch a riſk, in favour of a perſon who was utterly unknown.

known. The ſharper having gained the ſecond alſo, the noiſe increaſed to a ſurpriſing clamour, not only of the gang, but likewiſe of almoſt all the ſpectators, who deſired to lay two to one againſt the brother of Emilia.

Peregrine, who was preſent, perceiving the cupidity of the aſſociation ſufficiently inflamed, all of a ſudden opened his mouth, and anſwered their betts, to the amount of twelve hundred pounds; which were immediately depoſited, on both ſides, in money and notes: ſo that this was (perhaps) the moſt important game that ever was play'd at billiards. Gauntlet ſeeing the agreement ſettled, ſtruck his antagoniſt's ball into the pocket, in a twinkling, tho' it was in one of thoſe ſituations which are ſuppoſed to be againſt the ſtriker. The betters were a little diſcompoſed at this event, for which, however, they conſoled themſelves, by imputing the ſucceſs to accident; but when, at the very next ſtroke, he ſprung it over the table, their countenances underwent an inſtantaneous diſtraction of feature, and they waited, in the moſt dreadful ſuſpence, for the next hazard, which being likewiſe taken, with infinite eaſe, by the ſoldier, the blood forſook their cheeks, and the interjection *Zounds!* pronounced with a look of conſternation, and in a tone of deſpair, proceeded from every mouth, at the ſame inſtant of time. They were overwhelmed with horror and aſtoniſhment at ſeeing three hazards taken in as many ſtrokes, from a perſon of their friend's dexterity; and ſhrewdly ſuſpected, that the whole was a ſcheme preconcerted for their deſtruction: on this ſuppoſition, they changed the note, and attempted to hedge for their own indemnification, by propoſing to

lay the odds in favour of Gauntlet; but ſo much was the opinion of the company altered by that young gentleman's ſucceſs, that no body would venture to eſpouſe the cauſe of his competitor, who chancing to improve his game by the addition of another lucky hit, diminiſhed the concern, and revived the hopes of his adherents. But this gleam of fortune did not long continue: Godfrey collected his whole art and capacity, and augmenting his ſcore to number ten, indulged himſelf with a view of the whole fraternity. The viſages of theſe profeſſors had adopted different ſhades of complexion, at every hazard he had taken; from their natural colour they had ſhifted into a ſallow hue; from thence into pale; from pale into yellow, which degenerated into a mahogony tint; and now they ſaw ſeventeen hundred pounds of their ſtock depending upon a ſingle ſtroke, they ſtood like ſo many ſwarthy Moors, jaundiced with terror and vexation. The fire which naturally glowed in the cheeks and noſe of the player, ſeemed utterly extinct, and his carbuncles exhibited a livid appearance, as if a gangrene had already made ſome progreſs in his face; his hand began to ſhake, and his whole frame was ſeized with ſuch trepidation, that he was fain to ſwallow a bumper of brandy, in order to re-eſtabliſh the tranquillity of his nerves. This expedient, however, did not produce the deſired effect; for he aimed the ball at the lead with ſuch diſcompoſure, that it ſtruck on the wrong ſide, and came off at an angle which directed it full in the middle hole. This fatal accident was attended with an univerſal groan, as if the whole univerſe had gone to wreck: and notwithſtanding that tranquillity for which adventurers

venturers are ſo remarkable, this loſs made ſuch an impreſſion upon them all, that each in particular manifeſted his chagrin, by the moſt violent emotions. One turned up his eyes to heaven, and bit his nether lip; another gnawed his fingers, while he ſtalked acroſs the room; a third blaſphemed with horrible imprecations; and he who played the party, ſneaked off, grinding his teeth together, with a look that baffles all deſcription, and as he croſſed the threſhold, exclaiming, "A damn'd bite, by G—d!"

The victors, after having inſulted them, by aſking if they were diſpoſed for another chance, carried off their winning, with the appearance of great compoſure, though in their hearts they were tranſported with unſpeakable joy; not ſo much on account of the booty they had gained, as in conſideration of having ſo effectually deſtroyed ſuch a neſt of pernicious miſcreants.

Peregrine believing, that now he had found an opportunity of ſerving his friend, without giving offence to the delicacy of his honour, told him, upon their arrival at their lodgings, that fortune had at length enabled him to become in a manner independent, or at leaſt to make himſelf eaſy in his circumſtances, by purchaſing a company with the money he had won. So ſaying, he put his ſhare of the ſucceſs in Gauntlet's hand, as a ſum that of right belonged to him, and promiſed to write in his behalf to a nobleman, who had intereſt enough to promote ſuch a quick riſe in the ſervice.

Godfrey thanked him for his obliging intention, but abſolutely refuſed, with great loftineſs of demeanour, to appropriate to his own uſe any part of the money which Pickle had gained, and

ſeemed affronted at the other's entertaining a ſentiment ſo unworthy of his character. He would not even accept, in the way of loan, ſuch an addition to his own ſtock, as would amount to the price of a company of foot; but expreſſed great confidence in the future exertion of that talent which had been bleſſed with ſuch a proſperous beginning. Our hero finding him thus obſtinately deaf to the voice of his own intereſt, reſolved to govern himſelf in his next endeavours of friendſhip, by his experience of this tickliſh punctilio; and, in the mean time, gave a handſome benefaction to the hoſpital, out of theſe firſt-fruits of the ſucceſs in play, and reſerved two hundred pounds for a ſet of diamond ear-rings and ſolitaire, which he intended for a preſent to Miſs Emily.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXX.

The two friends eclipſe all their competitors in gallantry, and practiſe a pleaſant project of revenge upon the phyſicians of the place.

THE fame of their exploit againſt the ſharpers, was immediately diffuſed through all companies at the Bath; ſo that when our adventurers appeared in public, they were pointed out by an hundred extended fingers, and conſidered as conſummate artiſts in all the different ſpecies of fineſſe, which they would not fail to practiſe with the firſt opportunity. Nor was this opinion of their characters any obſtacle to their reception into the faſhionable parties in the place; but, on the contrary, ſuch a recommendation, which (as I have already hinted) never fails to operate for the advantage of the poſſeſſor.

This firſt adventure, therefore, ſerved them as an introduction to the company at Bath, who were not a little ſurprized to find their expectations baffled by the conduct of the two companions; becauſe, far from engaging deeply at play, they rather ſhunned all occaſions of gaming, and directed their attention to gallantry, in which our hero ſhone unrivalled. His external qualifications, excluſive of any other merit, were ſtrong enough to captivate the common run of the female ſex; and theſe, reinforced with a ſprightlineſs of converſation, and a moſt inſinuating addreſs, became irreſiſtible, even by thoſe who were fortified with pride, caution or indifference. But, among all the nymphs of this gay

place, he did not meet with one object that disputed the empire of his heart with Emilia; and therefore he divided his attachment according to the suggestions of vanity and whim; so that, before he had resided a fortnight at the Bath, he had set all the ladies by the ears, and furnished all the hundred tongues of scandal with full employment. The splendor of his appearance excited the inquiries of envy, which, instead of discovering any circumstance to his prejudice, was cursed with the information of his being a young gentleman of a good family, and heir to an immense fortune.

The countenance of some of his quality-friends, who arrived at Bath, confirmed this piece of intelligence: upon which, his acquaintance was courted and cultivated with great assiduity; and he met with such advances from some of the fair sex, as rendered him extremely fortunate in his amours. Nor was his friend Godfrey a stranger to favours of the same kind; his accomplishments were exactly calculated for the meridian of female taste; and with certain individuals of that sex, his muscular frame, and the robust connexion of his limbs, were more attractive than the delicate proportions of his companion. He accordingly reigned paramount among those inamorata's who were turned of thirty, without being under the necessity of proceeding by tedious addresses; and was thought to have co-operated with the waters, in removing the sterility of certain ladies, who had long undergone the reproach and disgust of their husbands: while Peregrine set up his throne among those who laboured under the disease of celibacy, from the pert miss of fifteen, who, with a flut-

tering

tering heart, toſſes her head, bridles up, and giggles involuntarily at ſight of an handſome young man, to the ſtaid maiden of twenty-eight, who, with a demure aſpect, moralizes on the vanity of beauty, the folly of youth, and ſimplicity of woman, and expatiates on friendſhip, benevolence, and good ſenſe, in the ſtile of a platonic philoſopher.

In ſuch a diverſity of diſpoſitions, his conqueſts were attended with all the heart-burnings, animoſities and turmoils of jealouſy and ſpite. The younger claſs took all opportunities of mortifying their ſeniors in public, by treating them with that indignity which (contrary to the general privilege of age) is by the conſent and connivance of mankind, levelled againſt thoſe who have the misfortune to come under the denomination of old maids; and theſe laſt retorted their hoſtilities in the private machinations of ſlander, ſupported by experience and ſubtility of invention. Not one day paſſed, in which ſome new ſtory did not circulate, to the prejudice of one or other of thoſe rivals.

If our hero, in the long-room, chanced to quit one of the moraliſts, with whom he had been engaged in converſation, he was immediately accoſted by a number of the oppoſite faction, who, with ironical ſmiles, upbraided him with cruelty to the poor lady he had left, exhorted him to have compaſſion on her ſufferings; and turning their eyes towards the object of their interceſſion, broke forth into an univerſal peal of laughter. On the other hand, when Peregrine, in conſequence of having danced with one of the minors over-night, viſited her in the morning, the Platoniſts immediately laid hold on the occa-

ſion, taſked their imaginations, aſſociated ideas, and with ſage inſinuations retailed a thouſand circumſtances of the interview, which never had any foundation in truth. They obſerved, that if girls are determined to behave with ſuch indiſcretion, they muſt lay their accounts with incurring the cenſure of the world; that ſhe in queſtion, was old enough to act more circumſpectly; and wondered that her mother would permit any young fellow to approach the chamber, while her daughter was naked in bed. As for the ſervants peeping through the key hole, to be ſure it was an unlucky accident; but people ought to be upon their guard againſt ſuch curioſity, and give their domeſtics no cauſe to employ their penetration. Theſe, and other ſuch reflections, were occaſionally whiſpered as ſecrets among thoſe who were known to be communicative; ſo that, in a few hours, it became the general topic of diſcourſe; and as it had been divulged under injunctions of ſecrecy, it was almoſt impoſſible to trace the ſcandal to its origin; becauſe every perſon concerned, muſt have promulgated her own breach of truſt, in diſcovering her author of the report.

Peregrine, inſtead of allaying, rather exaſperated this contention, by an artful diſtribution of his attention among the competitors; well knowing, that ſhould his regard be converged into one point, he would ſoon forfeit the pleaſure he enjoyed, in ſeeing them at variance; for both parties would join againſt the common enemy, and his favourite would be perſecuted by the whole coalition. He perceived, that among the ſecret agents of ſcandal, none were ſo buſy as the phyſicians, a claſs of animals who live

live in this place, like ſo many ravens hovering about a carcaſe, and even ply for employment, like ſcullers at Hungerford ſtairs. The greateſt part of them have correſpondents in London, who make it their buſineſs to enquire into the hiſtory, character, and diſtemper of every one that repairs to Bath, for the benefit of the waters; and if they cannot procure intereſt to recommend their medical friends to theſe patients, before they ſet out, they at leaſt furniſh them with a previous account of what they could collect, that their correſpondents may uſe this intelligence for their own advantage. By theſe means, and the aſſiſtance of flattery and aſſurance, they often inſinuate themſelves into the acquaintance of ſtrangers, and by conſulting their diſpoſitions, become neceſſary and ſubſervient to their prevailing paſſions. By their connexion with apothecaries and nurſes, they are informed of all the private occurrences in each family; and therefore enabled to gratify the rancour of malice, amuſe the ſpleen of peeviſh indiſpoſition, and entertain the eagerneſs of impertinent curioſity.

In the courſe of theſe occupations, which frequently affected the reputation of our two adventurers, this whole body fell under the diſpleaſure of our hero, who, after divers conſultations with his friend, concerted a ſtratagem, which was practiſed upon the faculty in this manner. Among thoſe who frequented the pump-room, was an old officer, whoſe temper, naturally impatient, was, by repeated attacks of the gout, which had almoſt deprived him of the uſe of his limbs, ſublimated into a remarkable degree of virulence and perverſeneſs: he imputed the inveteracy of his diſtemper to the male practice

of a ſurgeon who had adminiſtered to him, while he laboured under the conſequences of an unfortunate amour; and this ſuppoſition had inſpired him with an inſurmountable antipathy to all the profeſſors of the medical art, which was more and more confirmed by the information of a friend at London, who had told him, that it was a common practice among the phyſicians at Bath, to diſſuade their patients from drinking the water, that the cure, and of conſequence their attendance, might be the longer protracted.

Thus prepoſſeſſed, he had come to Bath, and, conformable to a few general inſtructions he had received, uſed the waters without any farther direction, taking all occaſions of manifeſting his hatred and contempt of the ſons of Æſculapius, both by ſpeech and geſticulations, and even by purſuing a regimen quite contrary to that which he knew they preſcribed to others, who ſeemed to be exactly in his condition. But he did not find his account in this method, how ſucceſsful ſoever it may have been in other caſes. His complaints, inſtead of vaniſhing, were every day more and more enraged; and at length he was confined to his bed, where he lay blaſpheming from morn to night, and from night to morn, though ſtill more determined than ever to adhere to his former maxims.

In the midſt of his torture, which was become the common joke of the town, being circulated through the induſtry of the phyſicians, who triumphed in his diſaſter; Peregrine, by means of Mr. Pipes, employed a country-fellow, who had come to market, to run with great haſte, early one morning, to the lodgings of all the doctors in town, and deſire them to attend the colonel

with

with all imaginable diſpatch. In conſequence of this ſummons, the whole faculty put themſelves in motion; and three of the foremoſt arriving at the ſame inſtant of time, far from complimenting one another with the door, each ſeparately eſſayed to enter, and the whole triumvirate ſtuck in the paſſage. While they remained thus wedged together, they deſcried two of their brethren poſting towards the ſame goal, with all the ſpeed that God had enabled them to exert; upon which they they came to a parley, and agreed to ſtand by one another. This covenant being made, they diſentangled themſelves, and inquiring about the patient, were told by the ſervant, that he had juſt fallen aſleep.

Having received this intelligence, they took poſſeſſion of his anti-chamber, and ſhut the door, while the reſt of the tribe poſted themſelves on the outſide, as they arrived; ſo that the whole paſſage was filled, from the top of the ſtair-caſe to the ſtreet-door; and the people of the houſe, together with the colonel's ſervant, ſtruck dumb with aſtoniſhment. The three leaders of this learned gang had no ſooner made their lodgment good, than they began to conſult about the patient's malady, which every one of them pretended to have conſidered with great care and aſſiduity. The firſt who gave his opinion, ſaid, the diſtemper was an obſtinate Arthritis; the ſecond affirmed, that it was no other than a confirmed pox; and the third ſwore it was an inveterate ſcurvy. This diverſity of opinions was ſupported by a variety of quotations from medical authors, ancient as well as modern: but theſe were not of ſufficient authority, or at leaſt not explicit enough to decide the diſpute; for there are many ſchiſms in medicine,

medicine, as well as in religion, and each ſect can quote the fathers in ſupport of the tenets they profeſs. In ſhort, the contention roſe to ſuch a pitch of clamour, as not only alarmed their brethren on the ſtair, but alſo waked the patient from the firſt nap he had enjoyed in the ſpace of ten whole days. Had it been ſimply waking, he would have been obliged to them for the noiſe that diſturbed him; for, in that caſe he would have been relieved from the tortures of hell-fire, to which, in his dream, he fancied himſelf expoſed: but this dreadful viſion had been the reſult of that impreſſion which was made upon his brain, by the intolerable anguiſh of his joints; ſo that, when he waked, the pain, inſtead of being allayed, was rather aggravated by a greater acuteneſs of ſenſation; and the confuſed vociferation in the next room, invading his ears at the ſame time, he began to think his dream was realized; and, in the pangs of deſpair, applied himſelf to a bell that ſtood by his bed-ſide, which he rung with great violence and perſeverance.

This alarm put an immediate ſtop to the diſputation of the three doctors, who, upon this notice of his being awake, ruſhed into his chamber without ceremony; and two of them ſeizing his arms, the third made the like application to one of his temples. Before the patient could recollect himſelf from the amazement which had laid hold on him, at this unexpected irruption, the room was filled by the reſt of the faculty, who followed the ſervant that entered, in obedience to his maſter's call; and the bed was, in a moment, ſurrounded by theſe gaunt miniſters of death. The colonel ſeeing himſelf beſet with ſuch an aſſemblage of ſolemn viſages and figures, which

he

he had always conſidered with the utmoſt deteſtation and abhorrence, was incenſed to a moſt inexpreſſible degree of indignation; and ſo inſpirited by his rage, that though his tongue denied its office, his other limbs performed their function; he diſengaged himſelf from the triumvirate, who had taken poſſeſſion of his body, ſprung out of bed with incredible agility, and ſeizing one of his crutches, applied it ſo effectually to one of the three, juſt as he ſtooped to examine the patient's water, that his tye-periwig dropped into the pot, while he himſelf fell motionleſs on the floor.

This ſignificant explanation diſconcerted the whole fraternity; every man turned his face, as if it were by inſtinct, towards the door; and the retreat of the community being obſtructed by the efforts of individuals, confuſion and tumultuous uproar enſued: for the colonel, far from limiting his proweſs to the firſt exploit, handled his weapon with aſtoniſhing vigour and dexterity, without reſpect of perſons; ſo that few or none of them had eſcaped without marks of his diſpleaſure, when his ſpirits failed, and he ſunk down again, quite exhauſted, on his bed. Favoured by this reſpite, the diſcomfited faculty collected their hats and wigs, which had fallen off in the fray; and perceiving the aſſailant too much enfeebled to renew the attack, ſet up their throats together, and loudly threatened to proſecute him ſeverely for ſuch an outrageous aſſault.

By this time, the landlord had interpoſed; and inquiring into the cauſe of the diſturbance, was informed of what had happened by the complainants, who, at the ſame time, giving him to underſtand, that they had been ſeverally ſummoned to attend the colonel that morning, he aſſured

assured them, that they had been imposed upon by some wag; for his lodger had never dream'd of consulting any one of their profession.

Thunderstruck at this declaration, the general clamour instantaneously ceased; and each, in particular, at once comprehending the nature of the joke, they sneaked silently off with the loss they had sustained, in unutterable shame and mortification; while Peregrine and his friend, who took care to be passing that way by accident, made a full stop at sight of such an extraordinary efflux, and enjoyed the countenance and condition of every one as he appeared: nay, even made up to some of those who seemed most affected with their situation, and mischievously tormented them with questions touching this unusual congregation; then, in consequence of the information they received from the landlord and the colonel's valet, subjected the sufferers to the ridicule of all the company in town. As it would have been impossible for the authors of this farce to keep themselves concealed from the indefatigable inquiries of the physicians, they made no secret of their having directed the whole; though they took care to own it in such an ambiguous manner, as afforded no handle of prosecution.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXI.

Peregrine *humbles a noted hector, and meets with a ſtrange character at the houſe of a certain lady.*

AMONG thoſe who never failed to reſide at Bath, during the ſeaſon, was a certain perſon, who, from the moſt abject miſery, had by his induſtry and art at play, amaſſed about fifteen thouſand pounds; and though his character was notorious, inſinuated himſelf ſo far into the favour of what is called the beſt company, that very few private parties of pleaſure took place, in which he was not principally concerned. He was of a gigantic ſtature, a moſt intrepid countenance; and his diſpoſition, naturally overbearing, had in the courſe of his adventures and ſucceſs, acquired a moſt intolerable degree of inſolence and vanity. By the ferocity of his features, and audacity of his behaviour, he had obtained a reputation for the moſt undaunted courage, which had been confirmed by divers adventures, in which he had humbled the moſt aſſuming heroes of his own fraternity: ſo that he now reigned chief Hector of the place, with unqueſtioned authority.

With this ſon of fortune was Peregrine one evening engaged at play, and ſo ſucceſsful, that he could not help informing his friend of his good luck. Godfrey hearing the deſcription of the loſer, immediately recognized the perſon, whom he had known at Tunbridge; and aſſuring Pickle, that he was a ſharper of the firſt water, cautioned

tioned him againſt any future connexion with ſuch a dangerous companion, who (he affirmed) had ſuffered him to win a ſmall ſum, that he might be encouraged to loſe a much greater, upon ſome other occaſion.

Our young gentleman treaſured up this adviſe; and though he did not ſcruple to give the gameſter an opportunity of retrieving his loſs, when he next day demanded his revenge, he abſolutely refuſed to proceed, after he had refunded his winning. The other, who conſidered him as a hot-headed unthinking youth, endeavoured to enflame his pride to a continuance of the game, by treating his ſkill with ſcorn and contempt; and, among other ſarcaſtic expreſſions, adviſing him to go to ſchool again, before he pretended to engage with maſters of the art. Our hero, incenſed at his arrogance, replied with great warmth, that he knew himſelf ſufficiently qualified for playing with men of honour, who deal upon the ſquare, and hoped he ſhould always deem it infamous, either to learn or practiſe the tricks of a profeſſed gameſter. "Blood and thunder! meaning me, Sir? (cried this artiſt, raiſing his voiſe, and curling his viſage into a moſt intimidating frown.) Zounds! I'll cut the throat of any ſcoundrel who has the preſumption to ſuppoſe, that I don't play as honourably as e'er a nobleman in the kingdom: and I inſiſt upon an explanation from you, Sir; or, by hell and brimſtone! I ſhall expect other ſort of ſatisfaction." Peregrine (whoſe blood by this time boiled within him) anſwered without heſitation; "Far from thinking your demand unreaſonable, I will immediately explain myſelf without reſerve, and tell you, that, upon unqueſtionable autho-

authority, I believe you to be an impudent raſcal and common cheat."

The Hector was ſo amazed and confounded at the freedom of this declaration, which he thought no man on earth would venture to make in his preſence, that for ſome minutes he could not recollect himſelf; but, at length, whiſpered a challenge in the ear of our hero, which was accordingly accepted. When they arrived next morning upon the field, the gameſter arming his countenance with all its terrors, advanced with a ſword of a monſtrous length, and putting himſelf in a poſture, called aloud in a moſt terrific voice, "Draw, damn ye, draw; I will this inſtant ſend you to your fathers." The youth was not ſlow in complying with his deſire; his weapon was unſheathed in a moment, and he began the attack with ſuch unexpected ſpirit and addreſs, that his adverſary, having made ſhift with great difficulty to parry the firſt paſs, retreated a few paces, and demanded a parley, in which he endeavoured to perſuade the young man, that to lay a man of his character under the neceſſity of chaſtiſing his inſolence, was the moſt raſh and inconſiderate ſtep that he could poſſibly have taken; but, that he had compaſſion upon his youth, and was willing to ſpare him, if he would ſurrender his ſword, and promiſe to aſk pardon in public for the offence he had given. Pickle was ſo much exaſperated at this unparalleled effrontery, that, without deigning to make the leaſt reply, he flung his own hat in the propoſer's face, and renewed the charge with ſuch undaunted agility, that the gameſter, finding himſelf in manifeſt hazard of his life, betook himſelf to his heels, and fled homewards with incredible

credible ſpeed, being cloſely purſued by Peregrine, who having ſheathed his ſword, pelted him with ſtones as he ran, and compelled him to go, that ſame day, into baniſhment from Bath, where he had domineered ſo long.

By this atchievement, which was the ſubject of aſtoniſhment to all the company, who had looked upon the fugitive as a perſon of heroic courage, our adventurer's reputation was rendered formidable in all its circumſtances; although he thereby diſobliged a good many people of faſhion, who had contracted an intimacy of friendſhip with the exile, and who reſented his diſgrace, as if it had been the misfortune of a worthy man. Theſe generous patrons, however, bore a very ſmall proportion to thoſe who were pleaſed with the event of the duel, becauſe, in the courſe of their reſidence at Bath, they had either been inſulted or defrauded by the challenger. Nor was this inſtance of our hero's courage unacceptable to the ladies, few of whom could now reſiſt the united force of ſuch accompliſhments. Indeed, neither he nor his friend Godfrey would have found much difficulty in picking up an agreeable companion for life; but Gauntlet's heart was preengaged to Sophy; and Pickle, excluſive of his attachment to Emily, which was ſtronger than he himſelf imagined, poſſeſſed ſuch a ſhare of ambition, as could not be ſatisfied with the conqueſt of any female he beheld at Bath.

His viſits were, therefore, promiſcuous, without any other view than that of amuſement; and though his pride was flattered by the advances of the fair whom he had captivated, he never harboured one thought of proceeding beyond the limits of common gallantry, and carefully avoided

all particular explanations. But, what above all other enjoyments yielded him the moſt agreeable entertainment, was the ſecret hiſtory of characters, which he learn'd from a very extraordinary perſon, with whom he became acquainted in this manner.

Being at the houſe of a certain lady, on a viſiting-day, he was ſtruck with the appearance of an old man, who no ſooner entered the room than the miſtreſs of the houſe very kindly deſired one of the wits preſent to roaſt the old put. This petit maitre, proud of the employment, went up to the ſenior, who had ſomething extremely peculiar and ſignificant in his countenance, and ſaluting him with divers faſhionable congès, accoſted him in theſe words: "Your ſervant, you old raſcal. I hope to have the honour of ſeeing you hang'd. I vow to Gad! you look extremely ſhocking, with theſe gummy eyes, lanthorn jaws, and toothleſs chaps. What! you ſquint at the ladies, you old rotten medlar? Yes, yes, we underſtand your ogling; but you muſt content yourſelf with a cook-maid, ſink me! I ſee you want to ſit. Theſe wither'd ſhanks of yours tremble under their burthen: but you muſt have a little patience, old Hirco; indeed you muſt. I intend to mortify you a little longer, curſe me!"

The company was ſo tickled with this addreſs, which was delivered with much grimace and geſticulation, that they burſt out into a loud fit of laughter, which they fathered upon a monkey that was chained in the room; and when the peal was over, the wit renewed his attack, in theſe words: "I ſuppoſe you are fool enough to think this mirth was occaſioned by Pug: ay, there

there he is; you had beſt ſurvey him; he is of your own family, ſwitch me: but the laugh was at your expence; and you ought to thank heaven for making you ſo ridiculous." While he uttered theſe ingenious ejaculations, the old gentleman bowed alternately to him and the monkey, that ſeemed to grin and chatter in imitation of the beau, and with an arch ſolemnity of viſage, pronounced, "Gentlemen, as I have not the honour to underſtand your compliments, they will be much better beſtowed on each other." So ſaying, he ſeated himſelf, and had the ſatisfaction to ſee the laugh returned upon the aggreſſor, who remained confounded and abaſhed, and in a few minutes left the room, muttering, as he retired, "the old fellow grows ſcurrilous, ſtap my breath."

While Peregrine wondered in ſilence at this extraordinary ſcene, the lady of the houſe perceiving his ſurprize, gave him to underſtand, that the ancient viſitant was utterly bereft of the ſenſe of hearing; that his name was Cadwallader Crabtree: his diſpoſition altogether miſanthropical; and that he was admitted into company on account of the entertainment he afforded by his ſarcaſtic obſervations, and the pleaſant miſtakes to which he was ſubject from his infirmity. Nor did our hero wait a long time for an illuſtration of this odd character. Every ſentence he ſpoke was replete with gall; nor did his ſatire conſiſt in general reflections, but in a ſeries of remarks, which had been made through the medium of a moſt whimſical peculiarity of opinion.

Among thoſe who were preſent at this aſſembly was a young officer, who having by dint of intereſt

tereſt obtained a ſeat in the lower houſe, thought it incumbent upon him to talk of affairs of ſtate; and accordingly regaled the company with an account of a ſecret expedition which the French were buſied in preparing; aſſuring them, that he had it from the mouth of the miniſter, to whom it had been tranſmitted by one of his agents abroad. In diſcanting upon the particulars of the armament, he obſerved, that they had twenty ſhips of the line, ready manned and victualled at Breſt, which were deſtined for Toulon, where they would be joined by as many more; and from thence proceed to the execution of their ſcheme, which he imparted as a ſecret not fit to be divulged.

This piece of intelligence being communicated to all the company except Mr. Crabtree, who ſuffered by his loſs of hearing, that cynic was ſoon after accoſted by a lady, who, by means of an artificial alphabet, formed by a certain conjunction and diſpoſition of the fingers, aſked if he had heard any extraordinary news of late? Cadwallader, with his uſual complaiſance, replied that he ſuppoſed ſhe took him for a courier or ſpy, by teizing him eternally with that queſtion. He then expatiated upon the fooliſh curioſity of mankind, which, he ſaid, muſt either proceed from idleneſs or want of ideas; and repeated almoſt verbatim the officer's information, a vague ridiculous report invented by ſome ignorant coxcomb, who wanted to give himſelf airs of importance, and believed only by thoſe who were utterly unacquainted with the politics and ſtrength of the French nation.

In confirmation of what he had advanced, he endeavoured to demonſtrate how impoſſible it

muſt be for that people to fit out even the third part of ſuch a navy, ſo ſoon after the loſſes they had ſuſtained during the war; and confirmed his proof by aſſerting, that, to his certain knowledge, the harbours of Breſt and Toulon could not at that time produce a ſquadron of eight ſhips of the line.

The member, who was an utter ſtranger to this miſanthrope, hearing his own aſſeverations treated with ſuch contempt, glowed with confuſion and reſentment, and raiſing his voice, began to defend his own veracity with great eagerneſs and trepidation, mingling with his arguments many bluſtering invectives againſt the inſolence and ill manners of his ſuppoſed contradictor, who ſat with the moſt mortifying compoſure of countenance, till the officer's patience was quite exhauſted; and then, to the manifeſt increaſe of his vexation, he was informed, that his antagoniſt was ſo deaf, that in all probability, the laſt trumpet would make no impreſſion upon him, without a previous renovation of his organs.

CHAP. LXXII.

He cultivates an acquaintance with the Miſanthrope, who favours him with a ſhort ſketch of his own hiſtory.

PEregrine was extremely well pleaſed with this occaſional rebuke, which occured ſo ſeaſonably, that he could ſcarce believe it accidental. He looked upon Cadwallader as the greateſt curioſity

riosity he had ever known, and cultivated the old man's acquaintance with such insinuating address, that in less than a fortnight he obtained his confidence. As they one day walked into the fields together, the Manhater disclos'd himself, in these words: "Tho' the term of our communication has been but short, you must have perceived, that I treat you with uncommon marks of regard; which, I assure you, is not owing to your personal acomplishments, nor the pains you take to oblige me; for the first I overlook, and the last I see through: but there is something in your disposition which indicates a rooted contempt for the world, and I understand you have made some successful efforts in exposing one part of it to the ridicule of the other. It is upon this assurance that I offer you my advice and assistance, in prosecuting other schemes of the same nature; and to convince you that such an alliance is not to be rejected, I will now give you a short sketch of my history, which will be published after my death in forty seven volumes of my own compiling.

I was born about forty miles from this place, of parents who having a very old family-name to support, bestowed their whole fortune on my elder brother; so that I inherited of my father little else than a large share of choler, to which I am indebted for a great many adventures that did not always end to my satisfaction. At the age of eighteen I was sent up to town, with a recommendation to a certain peer, who found means to amuse me with the promise of a commission, for seven whole years; and 'tis odds but I should have made my fortune by my perseverance, had not I been arrested, and thrown into

the Marſhalſea by my landlord, on whoſe credit I had ſubſiſted three years, after my father had renounced me as an idle vagabond. There I remained ſix months, among thoſe priſoners who have no other ſupport than chance charity; and contracted a very valuable acquaintance, which was of great ſervice to me in the future emergencies of my life.

I was no ſooner diſcharged, in conſequence of an act of parliament for the relief of inſolvent debtors, than I went to the houſe of my creditor, whom I cudgelled without mercy; and that I might leave nothing undone of thoſe things which I ought to have done, my next ſtage was to Weſtminſter-hall, where I waited until my patron came forth from the houſe, and ſaluted him with a blow that laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement: but my retreat was not ſo fortunate as I could have wiſhed: the chairmen and lacquies in waiting having ſurrounded and diſarmed me in a trice, I was committed to Newgate, and loaded with chains; and a very ſagacious gentleman, who was afterwards hanged, having ſat in judgment upon my caſe, pronounced me guilty of a capital crime, and foretold my condemnation at the Old Baily. His prognoſtic, however, was diſappointed; for no body appearing to proſecute me at the next ſeſſions, I was diſcharged, by order of the court. It would be impoſſible for me to recount, in the compaſs of one day's converſation, all the particular exploits in which I bore a conſiderable ſhare: ſuffice it to ſay, I have been, at different times, priſoner in all the jails within the bills of mortality. I have broke from every round-houſe on this ſide Temple bar. No bailiff, in the days of my

youth and desperation, durst execute a writ upon me without a dozen followers; and the justices themselves trembled when I was brought before them.

I was once maimed by a carman, with whom I quarrelled, because he ridiculed my leek on St. David's day; my skull was fractured by a butcher's cleaver, on the like occasion. I have been run thro' the body five times, and lost the tip of my left ear by a pistol bullet. In a rencounter of this kind, having left my antagonist for dead, I was wise enough to make my retreat into France; and a few days after my arrival at Paris entering into conversation with some officers on the subject of politics, a dispute arose, in which I lost my temper, and spoke so irreverently of the *Grand Monarque*, that next morning I was sent to the Bastile, by virtue of a *Lettre de Cachet*. There I remained for some months, deprived of all intercourse with rational creatures; a circumstance for which I was not sorry, as I had the more time to project schemes of revenge against the tyrant who confined me, and the wretch who had betrayed my private conversation: but tired, at length, with these fruitless suggestions, I was fain to unbend the severity of my thoughts by a correspondence with some industrious spiders, who had hung my dungeon with their ingenious labours.

I considered their work with such attention, that I soon became an adept in the mystery of weaving, and furnished myself with as many useful observations and reflections on that art, as will compose a very curious treatise, which I intend to bequeath to the Royal Society, for the benefit of our woollen manufacture; and this with

with a view to perpetuate my own name, rather than befriend my country: for, thank heaven! I am weaned from all attachments of that kind, and look upon myſelf as one very little obliged to any ſociety whatſoever. Although I preſided with abſolute power over this long-legg'd community, and diſtributed rewards and puniſhments to each, according to his deſerts, I grew impatient of my ſituation; and my natural diſpoſition, one day, prevailing, like a fire which had long been ſmothered, I wreaked the fury of my indignation upon my innocent ſubjects, and in a twinkling deſtroyed the whole race. While I was employed in this general maſſacre, the turnkey, who brought me food, opened the door, and perceiving my tranſport, ſhrugged up his ſhoulders, and leaving my allowance, went out pronouncing, *Le pauvre diable! la tete lui tourne.* My paſſion no ſooner ſubſided than I reſolved to profit by this opinion of the jailor, and from that day counterfeited lunacy with ſuch ſucceſs, that in leſs than three months I was delivered from the baſtile, and ſent to the gallies, in which they thought my bodily vigour might be of ſervice, although the faculties of my mind were decayed. Before I was chained to the oar, I received three hundred ſtripes by way of welcome, that I might thereby be rendered more tractable, notwithſtanding I uſed all the arguments in my power to perſuade them, I was only *mad north, north weſt, and when the wind was ſoutherly, knew a hawk from an hand ſaw.*

In our ſecond cruize we had the good fortune to be overtaken by a tempeſt, during which the ſlaves were unbound, that they might contribute the more to the preſervation of the galley, and have

have a chance for their lives, in caſe of ſhipwreck. We were no ſooner at liberty, than making ourſelves maſters of the veſſel, we robbed the officers, and ran her on ſhore among rocks on the coaſt of Portugal; from whence I haſtened to Liſbon, with a view of obtaining my paſſage in ſome ſhip bound for England, where, by this time, I hoped my affair was forgotten.

But before this ſcheme could be accompliſhed, my evil genius led me into company; and being intoxicated, I began to broach doctrines on the ſubject of religion, at which ſome of the partie were ſcandalized and incenſed; and I was next day dragged out of bed by the officers of the inquiſition, and conveyed to a cell in the priſon belonging to that tribunal.

At my firſt examination my reſentment was ſtrong enough to ſupport me under the torture which I endured without flinching; but my reſolution abated, and my zeal immediately cooled, when I underſtood from a fellow-priſoner, who groaned on the other ſide of the partition, that in a ſhort time there would be an *Auto da Fe*; in conſequence of which I ſhould, in all probability, be doomed to the flames, if I would not renounce my heretical errors, and ſubmit to ſuch penance as the church ſhould think fit to preſcribe. This miſerable wretch was convicted of Judaiſm, which he had privately practiſed, by connivance for many years, until he had amaſſed a fortune ſufficient to attract the regard of the church. To this he fell a ſacrifice, and accordingly prepared himſelf for the ſtake; while I, not at all ambitious of the crown of martyrdom, reſolved to temporize: ſo that, when I was

brought

brought to the queſtion the ſecond time, I made a ſolemn recantation. As I had no worldly fortune to obſtruct my ſalvation, I was received into the boſom of the church, and, by way of penance, enjoined to walk barefoot to Rome, in the habit of a pilgrim.

During my peregrination thro' Spain, I was detained as a ſpy, until I could procure credentials from the inquiſition at Liſbon; and behaved with ſuch reſolution and reſerve, that, after being releaſed, I was deemed a proper perſon to be employed in quality of a ſecret intelligencer, at a certain court. This office I undertook without heſitation; and being furniſhed with money and bills of credit, croſſed the Pyrenees, with intention to revenge myſelf upon the Spaniard for the ſeverities I had undergone, during my captivity.

Having therefore effectually diſguiſed myſelf by a change of dreſs, and a large patch on one eye. I hired an equipage, and appeared at Bologna, in quality of an itinerant phyſician; in which capacity I ſucceeded tolerably well, till my ſervants decamped in the night, with my baggage, and left me in the condition of Adam. In ſhort, I have travelled over the greateſt part of Europe, as a beggar, pilgrim, prieſt, ſoldier, gameſter and quack; and felt the extremes of indigence and opulence, with the inclemency of weather, in all its viciſſitudes. I have learned that the characters of mankind are every where the ſame; that common ſenſe and honeſty bear an infinitely ſmall proportion to folly and vice; and that life is at beſt a paultry province.

After having ſuffered innumerable hardſhips, dangers, and diſgraces, I returned to London, where

where I lived ſome years in a garret, and picked up a ſubſiſtence, ſuch as it was, by vending purges in the ſtreets, from the back of a pied horſe; in which ſituation I uſed to harangue the mob, in broken Engliſh, under pretence of being an High German doctor.

At laſt an uncle died, by whom I inherit an eſtate of three hundred pounds per annum, tho', in his life-time, he would not have parted with a ſix-pence, to ſave my ſoul and body from perdition.

I now appear in the world, not as a member of any community, or what is called a ſocial creature; but meerly as a ſpectator, who entertains himſelf with the grimaces of a jack-pudding, and banquets his ſpleen in beholding his enemies at loggerheads. That I may enjoy this diſpoſition, abſtracted from all interruption, danger, and participation, I feign myſelf deaf; an expedient by which I not only avoid all diſputes, and their conſequences, but alſo become maſter of a thouſand little ſecrets, which are every day whiſpered in my preſence, without any ſuſpicion of their being overheard. You ſaw how I handled that ſhallow politician at my lady Plauſible's the other day. The ſame method I practiſe upon the crazed tory, the bigot whig, the four ſupercilious pedant, the petulant critic, the bluſtering coward, the fawning tool, the pert pimp, ſly ſharper, and every other ſpecies of knaves and fools with which this kingdom abounds.

In conſequence of my rank and character I obtain free admiſſion to the ladies, among whom I have acquired the appellation of the Scandalous Chronicle. As I am conſidered (while ſilent) in no other light than that of a footſtool or elbow chair,

chair, they diveſt their converſation of all reſtraint before me, and gratify my ſenſe of hearing with ſtrange things, which (if I could prevail upon myſelf to give the world that ſatisfaction) would compoſe a curious piece of ſecret hiſtory, and exhibit a quite different idea of characters from what is commonly entertained.

By this time, young gentleman, you may perceive, that I have it in my power to be a valuable correſpondent; and that it will be your intereſt to deſerve my confidence."

Here the Miſanthrope left off ſpeaking, deſirous to know the ſentiments of our hero, who embraced the proffered allianee, in a tranſport of joy and ſurprize; and the treaty was no ſooner concluded than Mr. Crabtree began to perform articles, by imparting to him a thouſand delicious ſecrets, from the poſſeſſion of which he promiſed himſelf innumerable ſcenes of mirth and enjoyment. By means of this aſſociate, whom he conſidered as the ring of Gyges, he foreſaw that he ſhould be enabled to penetrate not only into the chambers but even to the inmoſt thoughts of the female ſex. In order to ward off ſuſpicion, they agreed to revile each other in public, and meet at a certain private rendezvous, to communicate their mutual diſcoveries, and concert their future operations.

6 OC 57

The End of the SECOND VOLUME.